



KR-367-315



# Battersea Public Libraries.

CENTRAL LIBRARY, LAVENDER HILL, S.W.

No. 1283

Class No. 821-Ten Vol 8

HOURS: Open from 10 a.m. till 9 p.m. on weekdays.  
(Thursdays from 10 a.m. till 1 p.m.)

Closed on Sundays and Public Holidays.

R

It is expected that borrowers will themselves exchange their books. Messengers will only have books entrusted to them at the discretion of the Librarian.

Borrowers must protect the books lent to them from any form of injury, or they will be required to pay a sum sufficient to repair or replace the book damaged.

Change of address must be notified to the Librarian, in writing, at the earliest opportunity.

NO PERSON SHALL RETURN TO THE LIBRARY ANY BOOK WHICH HAS BEEN EXPOSED TO INFECTION FROM ANY INFECTIOUS DISEASE, BUT SHALL DELIVER IT TO ANY SANITARY INSPECTOR ACTING ON BEHALF OF THE MEDICAL OFFICER OF HEALTH.

WL—5,000—7/26—211.

R

I

1283  
821 TENNYSON  
WORKS VOL 8  
QUEEN MARY  
AND HAROLD

 Wandsworth

# BASEMENT STOCK

3/93			
06/05			


34

**Battersea District Library**

Lavender Hill London SW11 1JB

Telephone 01-871 7466

0  
THIS B  
TH

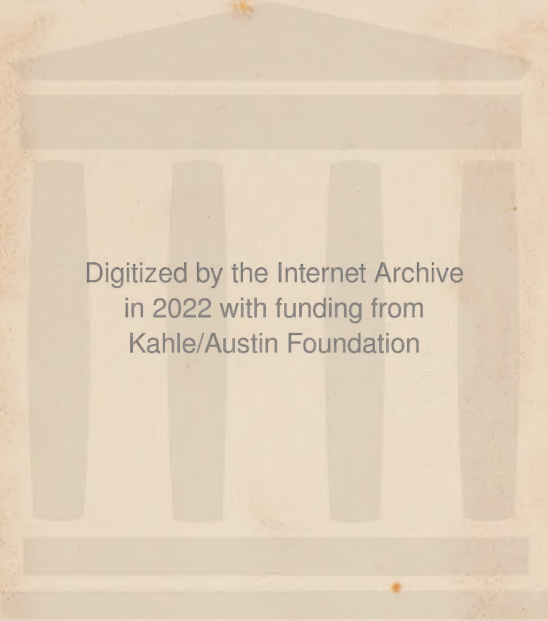
101 017 663 B1



BEFORE  
BEL







Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2022 with funding from  
Kahle/Austin Foundation



The Eversley Edition

QUEEN MARY  
AND  
HAROLD

\* \* \* \*  
\* \* \*  
\*



MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED

LONDON • BOMBAY • CALCUTTA  
MELBOURNE

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

NEW YORK • BOSTON • CHICAGO  
ATLANTA • SAN FRANCISCO

THE MACMILLAN CO. OF CANADA, LTD.

TORONTO



QUEEN MARY

AND

HAROLD

ANNOTATED

BY

ALFRED

LORD TENNYSON

EDITED BY

HALLAM, LORD TENNYSON

MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED  
ST. MARTIN'S STREET, LONDON

1908

821. Tpn. Vol. 8.

E 000 138 412

1283.

*The Notes are copyright in the U.S. of America.*



## CONTENTS.

	PAGE
QUEEN MARY: A DRAMA . . . . .	I
HAROLD: A DRAMA . . . . .	207
NOTES . . . . .	329





# QUEEN MARY:

A DRAMA.

THE DUKE OF ALVA }  
 THE COUNT DE FERIA } *attending on Philip.*

PETER MARTYR.

FATHER COLE.

FATHER BOURNE.

VILLA GARCIA.

SOTO.

CAPTAIN BRETT }  
 ANTHONY KNYVETT } *Adherents of Wyatt.*

PETERS, *Gentleman of Lord Howard.*

ROGER, *Servant to Noailles.*

WILLIAM, *Servant to Wyatt.*

STEWARD OF HOUSEHOLD *to the Princess Elizabeth.*

OLD NOKES *and* NOKES.

MARCHIONESS OF EXETER, *Mother of Courtenay.*

LADY CLARENCE

LADY MAGDALEN DACRES }  
 ALICE } *Ladies in Waiting to the Queen.*

MAID OF HONOUR *to the Princess Elizabeth.*

JOAN }  
 TIB } *two Country Wives.*

Lords *and other* Attendants, Members of the Privy Council,  
 Members of Parliament, Two Gentlemen, Aldermen,  
 Citizens, Peasants, Ushers, Messengers, Guards, Pages,  
 Gospellers, Marshalmen, *etc.*



# QUEEN MARY.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—ALDGATE RICHLY DECORATED.

CROWD. MARSHALMEN.

MARSHALMAN. Stand back, keep a clear lane !  
When will her Majesty pass, sayst thou ? why now,  
even now ; wherefore draw back your heads and your  
horns before I break them, and make what noise you  
will with your tongues, so it be not treason. Long  
live Queen Mary, the lawful and legitimate daughter  
of Harry the Eighth ! Shout, knaves !

CITIZENS. Long live Queen Mary !

FIRST CITIZEN. That's a hard word, legitimate ;  
what does it mean ?

SECOND CITIZEN. It means a bastard.

THIRD CITIZEN. Nay, it means true-born.

FIRST CITIZEN. Why, didn't the Parliament make  
her a bastard ?

SECOND CITIZEN. No ; it was the Lady Elizabeth.

THIRD CITIZEN. That was after, man ; that was after.

FIRST CITIZEN. Then which is the bastard ?

SECOND CITIZEN. Troth, they be both bastards by Act of Parliament and Council.

THIRD CITIZEN. Ay, the Parliament can make every true-born man of us a bastard. Old Nokes, can't it make thee a bastard ? thou shouldst know, for thou art as white as three Christmasses.

OLD NOKES (*dreamily*). Who's a-passing ? King Edward or King Richard ?

THIRD CITIZEN. No, old Nokes.

OLD NOKES. It's Harry !

THIRD CITIZEN. It's Queen Mary.

OLD NOKES. The blessed Mary's a-passing !

[*Falls on his knees.*]

NOKES. Let father alone, my masters ! he's past your questioning.

THIRD CITIZEN. Answer thou for him, then ! thou'rt no such cockerel thyself, for thou was born i' the tail end of old Harry the Seventh.

NOKES. Eh ! that was afore bastard-making began. I was born true man at five in the forenoon i' the tail of old Harry, and so they can't make me a bastard.

THIRD CITIZEN. But if Parliament can make the



Queen a bastard, why, it follows all the more that they can make thee one, who art fray'd i' the knees, and out at elbow, and bald o' the back, and bursten at the toes, and down at heels.

NOKES. I was born of a true man and a ring'd wife, and I can't argue upon it; but I and my old woman 'ud burn upon it, that would we.

MARSHALMAN. What are you cackling of bastardy under the Queen's own nose? I'll have you flogg'd and burnt too, by the Rood I will.

FIRST CITIZEN. He swears by the Rood. Whew!

SECOND CITIZEN. Hark! the trumpets.

[*The Procession passes, MARY and ELIZABETH riding side by side, and disappears under the gate.*]

CITIZENS. Long live Queen Mary! down with all traitors! God save her Grace; and death to Northumberland! [Exeunt.]

*Manent* TWO GENTLEMEN.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. By God's light a noble creature, right royal!

SECOND GENTLEMAN. She looks comelier than ordinary to-day; but to my mind the Lady Elizabeth is the more noble and royal.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. I mean the Lady Elizabeth. Did you hear (I have a daughter in her service who

reported it) that she met the Queen at Wanstead with five hundred horse, and the Queen (tho' some say they be much divided) took her hand, call'd her sweet sister, and kiss'd not her alone, but all the ladies of her following.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. Ay, that was in her hour of joy ; there will be plenty to sunder and unsister them again : this Gardiner for one, who is to be made Lord Chancellor, and will pounce like a wild beast out of his cage to worry Cranmer.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. And furthermore, my daughter said that when there rose a talk of the late rebellion, she spoke even of Northumberland pitifully, and of the good Lady Jane as a poor innocent child who had but obeyed her father ; and furthermore, she said that no one in her time should be burnt for heresy.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. Well, sir, I look for happy times.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. There is but one thing against them. I know not if you know.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. I suppose you touch upon the rumour that Charles, the master of the world, has offer'd her his son Philip, the Pope and the Devil. I trust it is but a rumour.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. She is going now to the Tower to loose the prisoners there, and among them

Courtenay, to be made Earl of Devon, of royal blood, of splendid feature, whom the council and all her people wish her to marry. May it be so, for we are many of us Catholics, but few Papists, and the Hot Gospellers will go mad upon it.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. Was she not betroth'd in her babyhood to the Great Emperor himself?

FIRST GENTLEMAN. Ay, but he's too old.

SECOND GENTLEMAN. And again to her cousin Reginald Pole, now Cardinal ; but I hear that he too is full of aches and broken before his day.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. O, the Pope could dispense with his Cardinalate, and his achage, and his breakage, if that were all : will you not follow the procession ?

SECOND GENTLEMAN. No ; I have seen enough for this day.

FIRST GENTLEMAN. Well, I shall follow ; if I can get near enough I shall judge with my own eyes whether her Grace incline to this splendid scion of Plantagenet. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—A ROOM IN LAMBETH PALACE.

CRANMER. To Strasburg, Antwerp, Frankfort,  
Zurich, Worms,  
Geneva, Basle—our Bishops from their sees

Or fled, they say, or flying—Poinet, Barlow,  
Bale, Scory, Coverdale ; besides the Deans  
Of Christchurch, Durham, Exeter, and Wells—  
Ailmer and Bullingham, and hundreds more ;  
So they report : I shall be left alone.  
No : Hooper, Ridley, Latimer will not fly.

*Enter* PETER MARTYR.

PETER MARTYR. Fly, Cranmer ! were there  
nothing else, your name  
Stands first of those who sign'd the Letters Patent  
That gave her royal crown to Lady Jane.

CRANMER. Stand first it may, but it was written  
last :

Those that are now her Privy Council, sign'd  
Before me : nay, the Judges had pronounced  
That our young Edward might bequeath the crown  
Of England, putting by his father's will.  
Yet I stood out, till Edward sent for me.  
The wan boy-king, with his fast-fading eyes  
Fixt hard on mine, his frail transparent hand,  
Damp with the sweat of death, and griping mine,  
Whisper'd me, if I loved him, not to yield  
His Church of England to the Papal wolf  
And Mary ; then I could no more—I sign'd.  
Nay, for bare shame of inconsistency,



She cannot pass her traitor council by,  
To make me headless.

PETER MARTYR. That might be forgiven.  
I tell you, fly, my Lord. You do not own  
The bodily presence in the Eucharist,  
Their wafer and perpetual sacrifice :  
Your creed will be your death.

CRANMER. Step after step,  
Thro' many voices crying right and left,  
Have I climb'd back into the primal church,  
And stand within the porch, and Christ with me :  
My flight were such a scandal to the faith,  
The downfall of so many simple souls,  
I dare not leave my post.

PETER MARTYR. But you divorced  
Queen Catharine and her father ; hence, her hate  
Will burn till you are burn'd.

CRANMER. I cannot help it.  
The Canonists and Schoolmen were with me.  
'Thou shalt not wed thy brother's wife.'—'Tis written,  
'They shall be childless.' True, Mary was born,  
But France would not accept her for a bride  
As being born from incest ; and this wrought  
Upon the king ; and child by child, you know,  
Were momentary sparkles out as quick  
Almost as kindled ; and he brought his doubts  
And fears to me. Peter, I'll swear for him

He *did* believe the bond incestuous.  
But wherefore am I trenching on the time  
That should already have seen your steps a mile  
From me and Lambeth? God be with you! Go.

PETER MARTYR. Ah, but how fierce a letter you  
wrote against  
Their superstition when they slander'd you  
For setting up a mass at Canterbury  
To please the Queen.

CRANMER. It was a wheedling monk  
Set up the mass.

PETER MARTYR. I know it, my good Lord.  
But you so bubbled over with hot terms  
Of Satan, liars, blasphemy, Antichrist,  
She never will forgive you. Fly, my Lord, fly!

CRANMER. I wrote it, and God grant me power  
to burn!

PETER MARTYR. They have given me a safe  
conduct: for all that  
I dare not stay. I fear, I fear, I see you,  
Dear friend, for the last time; farewell, and fly.

CRANMER. Fly and farewell, and let me die the  
death. [*Exit* PETER MARTYR.

*Enter* OLD SERVANT.

O, kind and gentle master, the Queen's Officers  
Are here in force to take you to the Tower.

CRANMER. Ay, gentle friend, admit them. I  
will go.

I thank my God it is too late to fly. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—ST. PAUL'S CROSS.

FATHER BOURNE *in the pulpit*. A CROWD. MARCHIONESS OF EXETER, COURTENAY. *The SIEUR DE NOAILLES and his man ROGER in front of the stage. Hubbub.*

NOAILLES. Hast thou let fall those papers in the  
palace?

ROGER. Ay, sir.

NOAILLES. 'There will be no peace for Mary till  
Elizabeth lose her head.'

ROGER. Ay, sir.

NOAILLES. And the other, 'Long live Elizabeth  
the Queen!'

ROGER. Ay, sir; she needs must tread upon them,

NOAILLES. Well

These beastly swine make such a grunting here,  
I cannot catch what Father Bourne is saying.

ROGER. Quiet a moment, my masters; hear what  
the shaveling has to say for himself.

CROWD. Hush—hear!

BOURNE. —and so this unhappy land, long divided

in itself, and sever'd from the faith, will return into the one true fold, seeing that our gracious Virgin Queen hath——

CROWD. No pope ! no pope !

ROGER (*to those about him, mimicking* BOURNE). —hath sent for the holy legate of the holy father the Pope, Cardinal Pole, to give us all that holy absolution which——

FIRST CITIZEN. Old Bourne to the life !

SECOND CITIZEN. Holy absolution ! holy Inquisition !

THIRD CITIZEN. Down with the Papist !

[*Hubbub.*

BOURNE. —and now that your good bishop, Bonner, who hath lain so long under bonds for the faith——

[*Hubbub.*

NOAILLES. Friend Roger, steal thou in among the crowd,

And get the swine to shout Elizabeth.

Yon gray old Gospeller, sour as midwinter,

Begin with him.

ROGER (*goes*). By the mass, old friend, we'll have no pope here while the Lady Elizabeth lives.

GOSPELLER. Art thou of the true faith, fellow, that swearest by the mass ?

ROGER. Ay, that am I, new converted, but the old leaven sticks to my tongue yet.

FIRST CITIZEN. He says right ; by the mass we'll have no mass here.

VOICES OF THE CROWD. Peace ! hear him ; let his own words damn the Papist. From thine own mouth I judge thee—tear him down !

BOURNE. —and since our Gracious Queen, let me call her our second Virgin Mary, hath begun to re-edify the true temple——

FIRST CITIZEN. Virgin Mary ! we'll have no virgins here—we'll have the Lady Elizabeth !

*[Swords are drawn, a knife is hurled and sticks in the pulpit. The mob throng to the pulpit stairs.]*

MARCHIONESS OF EXETER. Son Courtenay, wilt thou see the holy father

Murdered before thy face ? up, son, and save him !

They love thee, and thou canst not come to harm.

COURTENAY (*in the pulpit*). Shame, shame, my masters ! are you English-born,

And set yourselves by hundreds against one ?

CROWD. A Courtenay ! a Courtenay !

*[A train of Spanish servants crosses at the back of the stage.]*

NOAILLES. These birds of passage come before their time :

Stave off the crowd upon the Spaniard there.

ROGER. My masters, yonder's fatter game for you Than this old gaping gurgyle : look you there—

The Prince of Spain coming to wed our Queen !  
After him, boys ! and pelt him from the city.

[*They seize stones and follow the Spaniards.*

*Exeunt on the other side* MARCHIONESS OF  
EXETER *and* ATTENDANTS.

NOAILLES (*to* ROGER). Stand from me. If Eliza-  
beth lose her head—

That makes for France.

And if her people, anger'd thereupon,

Arise against her and dethrone the Queen—

That makes for France.

And if I breed confusion anyway—

That makes for France.

Good-day, my Lord of Devon ;

A bold heart yours to beard that raging mob !

COURTENAY. Mymother said, Go up ; and up I went.

I knew they would not do me any wrong,

For I am mighty popular with them, Noailles.

NOAILLES. You look'd a king.

COURTENAY. Why not ? I am king's blood.

NOAILLES. And in the whirl of change may come  
to be one.

COURTENAY. Ah !

NOAILLES. But does your gracious Queen entreat  
you kinglike ?

COURTENAY. 'Fore God, I think she entreats me  
like a child.

NOAILLES. You've but a dull life in this maiden court,  
I fear, my Lord ?

COURTENAY. A life of nods and yawns.

NOAILLES. So you would honour my poor house  
to-night,

We might enliven you. Divers honest fellows,  
The Duke of Suffolk lately freed from prison,  
Sir Peter Carew and Sir Thomas Wyatt,  
Sir Thomas Stafford, and some more—we play.

COURTENAY. At what ?

NOAILLES. The Game of Chess.

COURTENAY. The Game of Chess !

I can play well, and I shall beat you there.

NOAILLES. Ay, but we play with Henry, King of  
France,

And certain of his court.

His Highness makes his moves across the Channel,  
We answer him with ours, and there are messengers  
That go between us.

COURTENAY. Why, such a game, sir, were whole  
years a playing.

NOAILLES. Nay ; not so long I trust. That all  
depends

Upon the skill and swiftness of the players.

COURTENAY. The King is skilful at it ?

NOAILLES. Very, my Lord.

COURTENAY. And the stakes high ?

NOAILLES. But not beyond your means.

COURTENAY. Well, I'm the first of players. I shall win.

NOAILLES. With our advice and in our company,  
And so you well attend to the king's moves,  
I think you may.

COURTENAY. When do you meet?

NOAILLES. To-night.

COURTENAY (*aside*). I will be there; the fellow's  
at his tricks—

Deep—I shall fathom him. (*Aloud.*) Good morn-  
ing, Noailles. [*Exit* COURTENAY.

NOAILLES. Good-day, my Lord. Strange game of  
chess! a King

That with her own pawns plays against a Queen,  
Whose play is all to find herself a King.

Ay; but this fine blue-blooded Courtenay seems  
Too princely for a pawn. Call him a Knight,  
That, with an ass's, not a horse's head,  
Skips every way, from levity or from fear.

Well, we shall use him somehow, so that Gardiner  
And Simon Renard spy not out our game  
Too early. Roger, thinkest thou that anyone  
Suspected thee to be my man?

ROGER. Not one, sir.

NOAILLES. No! the disguise was perfect. Let's  
away. [*Exeunt.*



SCENE IV.—LONDON. A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

ELIZABETH. *Enter* COURTENAY.

COURTENAY. So yet am I,  
Unless my friends and mirrors lie to me,  
A goodlier-looking fellow than this Philip.  
Pah!  
The Queen is ill advised: shall I turn traitor?  
They've almost talked me into it: yet the word  
Affrights me somewhat: to be such a one  
As Harry Bolingbroke hath a lure in it.  
Good now, my Lady Queen, tho' by your age,  
And by your looks you are not worth the having,  
Yet by your crown you are. [*Seeing* ELIZABETH.  
The Princess there?

If I tried her and la—she's amorous.  
Have we not heard of her in Edward's time,  
Her freaks and frolics with the late Lord Admiral?  
I do believe she'd yield. I should be still  
A party in the state; and then, who knows—

ELIZABETH. What are you musing on, my Lord of  
Devon?

COURTENAY. Has not the Queen—

ELIZABETH. Done what, Sir?

COURTENAY. —made you follow  
The Lady Suffolk and the Lady Lennox?—

You,  
The heir presumptive.

ELIZABETH. Why do you ask ? you know it.

COURTENAY. You needs must bear it hardly.

ELIZABETH. No, indeed !

I am utterly submissive to the Queen.

COURTENAY. Well, I was musing upon that ; the  
Queen

Is both my foe and yours : we should be friends.

ELIZABETH. My Lord, the hatred of another to us  
Is no true bond of friendship.

COURTENAY. Might it not  
Be the rough preface of some closer bond ?

ELIZABETH. My Lord, you late were loosed from  
out the Tower,  
Where, like a butterfly in a chrysalis,  
You spent your life ; that broken, out you flutter  
Thro' the new world, go zigzag, now would settle  
Upon this flower, now that ; but all things here  
At court are known ; you have solicited  
The Queen, and been rejected.

COURTENAY. Flower, she !  
Half faded ! but you, cousin, are fresh and sweet  
As the first flower no bee has ever tried.

ELIZABETH. Are you the bee to try me ? why, but  
now  
I called you butterfly.

COURTENAY.                You did me wrong,  
I love not to be called a butterfly :  
Why do you call me butterfly ?

ELIZABETH.    Why do you go so gay then ?

COURTENAY.                Velvet and gold.  
This dress was made me as the Earl of Devon  
To take my seat in ; looks it not right royal ?

ELIZABETH.    So royal that the Queen forbad you  
wearing it.

COURTENAY.    I wear it then to spite her.

ELIZABETH.                My Lord, my Lord ;  
I see you in the Tower again.    Her Majesty  
Hears you affect the Prince—prelates kneel to  
you.—

COURTENAY.    I am the noblest blood in Europe,  
Madam,  
A Courtenay of Devon, and her cousin.

ELIZABETH.    She hears you make your boast that  
after all  
She means to wed you.    Folly, my good Lord.

COURTENAY.    How folly ? a great party in the state  
Wills me to wed her.

ELIZABETH.                Failing her, my Lord,  
Doth not as great a party in the state  
Will you to wed me ?

COURTENAY.                Even so, fair lady.

ELIZABETH.    You know to flatter ladies.



Nay, pout not, cousin.

Not many friends are mine, except indeed  
Among the many. I believe you mine ;  
And so you may continue mine, farewell,  
And that at once.

*Enter MARY, behind.*

MARY. Whispering—leagued together  
To bar me from my Philip.

COURTENAY. Pray—consider—

ELIZABETH (*seeing the QUEEN*). Well, that's a  
noble horse of yours, my Lord.

I trust that he will carry you well to-day,  
And heal your headache.

COURTENAY. You are wild ; what headache?  
Heartache, perchance ; not headache.

ELIZABETH (*aside to COURTENAY*). Are you blind?  
[COURTENAY *sees the QUEEN and exit*. *Exit MARY*.

*Enter LORD WILLIAM HOWARD.*

HOWARD. Was that my Lord of Devon? do not  
you

Be seen in corners with my Lord of Devon.  
He hath fallen out of favour with the Queen.  
She fears the Lords may side with you and him  
Against her marriage ; therefore is he dangerous.

And if this Prince of fluff and feather come  
To woo you, niece, he is dangerous everyway.

ELIZABETH. Not very dangerous that way, my  
good uncle.

HOWARD. But your own state is full of danger  
here.

The disaffected, heretics, reformers,  
Look to you as the one to crown their ends.  
Mix not yourself with any plot I pray you ;  
Nay, if by chance you hear of any such,  
Speak not thereof—no, not to your best friend,  
Lest you should be confounded with it. Still—  
Perinde ac cadaver—as the priest says,  
You know your Latin—quiet as a dead body.  
What was my Lord of Devon telling you ?

ELIZABETH. Whether he told me anything or not,  
I follow your good counsel, gracious uncle.  
Quiet as a dead body.

HOWARD. You do right well.  
I do not care to know ; but this I charge you,  
Tell Courtenay nothing. The Lord Chancellor  
(I count it as a kind of virtue in him,  
He hath not many), as a mastiff dog  
May love a puppy cur for no more reason  
Than that the twain have been tied up together,  
Thus Gardiner—for the two were fellow-prisoners  
So many years in yon accursed Tower—

Hath taken to this Courtenay. Look to it, niece,  
He hath no fence when Gardiner questions him ;  
All oozes out ; yet him—because they know him  
The last White Rose, the last Plantagenet  
(Nay, there is Cardinal Pole, too), the people  
Claim as their natural leader—ay, some say,  
That you shall marry him, make him King belike.

ELIZABETH. Do they say so, good uncle ?

HOWARD. Ay, good niece !

You should be plain and open with me, niece.

You should not play upon me.

ELIZABETH. No, good uncle.

*Enter GARDINER.*

GARDINER. The Queen would see your Grace  
upon the moment.

ELIZABETH. Why, my lord Bishop ?

GARDINER. I think she means to counsel your  
withdrawing

To Ashridge, or some other country house.

ELIZABETH. Why, my lord Bishop ?

GARDINER. I do but bring the message, know no  
more.

Your Grace will hear her reasons from herself.

ELIZABETH. 'Tis mine own wish fulfill'd before  
the word

Was spoken, for in truth I had meant to crave  
Permission of her Highness to retire  
To Ashridge, and pursue my studies there.

GARDINER. Madam, to have the wish before the word  
Is man's good Fairy—and the Queen is yours.  
I left her with rich jewels in her hand,  
Whereof 'tis like enough she means to make  
A farewell present to your Grace.

ELIZABETH. My Lord,  
I have the jewel of a loyal heart.

GARDINER. I doubt it not, Madam, most loyal.  
[*Bows low and exit.*]

HOWARD. See,  
This comes of parleying with my Lord of Devon.  
Well, well, you must obey ; and I myself  
Believe it will be better for your welfare.  
Your time will come.

ELIZABETH. I think my time will come.  
Uncle,  
I am of sovereign nature, that I know,  
Not to be quell'd ; and I have felt within me  
Stirrings of some great doom when God's just hour  
Peals—but this fierce old Gardiner—his big baldness,  
That irritable forelock which he rubs,  
His buzzard beak and deep-incavern'd eyes  
Half fright me.

HOWARD. You've a bold heart ; keep it so.



He cannot touch you save that you turn traitor ;  
And so take heed I pray you—you are one  
Who love that men should smile upon you, niece.  
They'd smile you into treason—some of them.

ELIZABETH. I spy the rock beneath the smiling sea.  
But if this Philip, the proud Catholic prince,  
And this bald priest, and she that hates me, seek  
In that lone house, to practise on my life,  
By poison, fire, shot, stab—

HOWARD. They will not, niece.  
Mine is the fleet and all the power at sea—  
Or will be in a moment. If they dared  
To harm you, I would blow this Philip and all  
Your trouble to the dogstar and the devil.

ELIZABETH. To the Pleiads, uncle ; they have lost  
a sister.

HOWARD. But why say that ? what have you done  
to lose her ?

Come, come, I will go with you to the Queen.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

MARY *with* PHILIP'S *miniature*. ALICE.

MARY (*kissing the miniature*). Most goodly, King-  
like and an Emperor's son,—  
A king to be,—is he not noble, girl ?

ALICE. Goodly enough, your Grace, and yet,  
methinks,

I have seen goodlier.

MARY. Ay ; some waxen doll  
Thy baby eyes have rested on, belike ;  
All red and white, the fashion of our land.  
But my good mother came (God rest her soul)  
Of Spain, and I am Spanish in myself,  
And in my likings.

ALICE. By your Grace's leave  
Your royal mother came of Spain, but took  
To the English red and white. Your royal father  
(For so they say) was all pure lily and rose  
In his youth, and like a lady.

MARY. O, just God !  
Sweet mother, you had time and cause enough  
To sicken of his lilies and his roses.  
Cast off, betray'd, defamed, divorced, forlorn !  
And then the King—that traitor past forgiveness,  
The false archbishop fawning on him, married  
The mother of Elizabeth—a heretic  
Ev'n as *she* is ; but God hath sent me here  
To take such order with all heretics  
That it shall be, before I die, as tho'  
My father and my brother had not lived.  
What wast thou saying of this Lady Jane,  
Now in the Tower ?

ALICE.               Why, Madam, she was passing  
Some chapel down in Essex, and with her  
Lady Anne Wharton, and the Lady Anne  
Bow'd to the Pyx ; but Lady Jane stood up  
Stiff as the very backbone of heresy.  
And wherefore bow ye not, says Lady Anne,  
To him within there who made Heaven and Earth ?  
I cannot, and I dare not, tell your Grace  
What Lady Jane replied.

MARY.               But I will have it.

ALICE.    She said—pray pardon me, and pity her—  
She hath harken'd evil counsel—ah ! she said,  
The baker made him.

MARY.               Monstrous ! blasphemous !  
She ought to burn.   Hence, thou (*Exit ALICE*). No  
—being traitor

Her head will fall : shall it ? she is but a child.  
We do not kill the child for doing that  
His father whipt him into doing—a head  
So full of grace and beauty ! would that mine  
Were half as gracious ! O, my lord to be,  
My love, for thy sake only.  
I am eleven years older than he is.  
But will he care for that ?  
No, by the holy Virgin, being noble,  
But love me only : then the bastard sprout,  
My sister, is far fairer than myself.

Will he be drawn to her ?

No, being of the true faith with myself.

Paget is for him—for to wed with Spain

Would treble England—Gardiner is against him ;

The Council, people, Parliament against him ;

But I will have him ! My hard father hated me ;

My brother rather hated me than loved ;

My sister cowers and hates me. Holy Virgin,

Plead with thy blessed Son ; grant me my prayer :

Give me my Philip ; and we two will lead

The living waters of the Faith again

Back thro' their widow'd channel here, and watch

The parch'd banks rolling incense, as of old,

To heaven, and kindled with the palms of Christ !

*Enter USHER.*

Who waits, sir ?

USHER. Madam, the Lord Chancellor.

MARY. Bid him come in. (*Enter GARDINER.*)

Good morning, my good Lord. [*Exit USHER.*

GARDINER. That every morning of your Majesty

May be most good, is every morning's prayer

Of your most loyal subject, Stephen Gardiner.

MARY. Come you to tell me this, my Lord ?

GARDINER.

And more.

Your people have begun to learn your worth.

Your pious wish to pay King Edward's debts,

Your lavish household curb'd, and the remission  
Of half that subsidy levied on the people,  
Make all tongues praise and all hearts beat for you.  
I'd have you yet more loved : the realm is poor,  
The exchequer at neap-tide : we might withdraw  
Part of our garrison at Calais.

MARY.

Calais !

Our one point on the main, the gate of France !  
I am Queen of England ; take mine eyes, mine  
heart,  
But do not lose me Calais.

GARDINER.

Do not fear it.

Of that hereafter. I say your Grace is loved.  
That I may keep you thus, who am your friend  
And ever faithful counsellor, might I speak ?

MARY. I can forespeak your speaking. Would I  
marry  
Prince Philip, if all England hate him ? That is  
Your question, and I front it with another :  
Is it England, or a party ? Now, your answer.

GARDINER. My answer is, I wear beneath my  
dress

A shirt of mail : my house hath been assaulted,  
And when I walk abroad, the populace,  
With fingers pointed like so many daggers,  
Stab me in fancy, hissing Spain and Philip ;  
And when I sleep, a hundred men-at-arms

Guard my poor dreams for England. Men would  
murder me,

Because they think me favourer of this marriage.

MARY. And that were hard upon you, my Lord  
Chancellor.

GARDINER. But our young Earl of Devon—

MARY. Earl of Devon?

I freed him from the Tower, placed him at  
Court ;

I made him Earl of Devon, and—the fool—

He wrecks his health and wealth on courtesans,  
And rolls himself in carrion like a dog.

GARDINER. More like a school-boy that hath  
broken bounds,  
Sickening himself with sweets.

MARY. I will not hear of him.  
Good, then, they will revolt : but I am Tudor,  
And shall control them.

GARDINER. I will help you, Madam,  
Even to the utmost. All the church is grateful.  
You have ousted the mock priest, repulped  
The shepherd of St. Peter, raised the rood again,  
And brought us back the mass. I am all thanks  
To God and to your Grace : yet I know well,  
Your people, and I go with them so far,  
Will brook nor Pope nor Spaniard here to play  
The tyrant, or in commonwealth or church.

MARY (*showing the picture*). Is this the face of  
one who plays the tyrant?

Peruse it; is it not goodly, ay, and gentle?

GARDINER. Madam, methinks a cold face and a  
haughty.

And when your Highness talks of Courtenay—

Ay, true—a goodly one. I would his life

Were half as goodly (*aside*).

MARY. What is that you mutter?

GARDINER. Oh, Madam, take it bluntly; marry  
Philip,

And be stepmother of a score of sons!

The prince is known in Spain, in Flanders, ha!

For Philip—

MARY. You offend us; you may leave us.

You see thro' warping glasses.

GARDINER. If your Majesty—

MARY. I have sworn upon the body and blood of  
Christ

I'll none but Philip.

GARDINER. Hath your Grace so sworn?

MARY. Ay, Simon Renard knows it.

GARDINER. News to me!

It then remains for your poor Gardiner,

So you still care to trust him somewhat less

Than Simon Renard, to compose the event

In some such form as least may harm your Grace.

MARY. I'll have the scandal sounded to the mud.  
I know it a scandal.

GARDINER. All my hope is now  
It may be found a scandal.

MARY. You offend us.

GARDINER (*aside*). These princes are like children,  
must be physick'd,  
The bitter in the sweet. I have lost mine office,  
It may be, thro' mine honesty, like a fool.

[*Exit.*

*Enter* USHER.

MARY. Who waits?

USHER. The Ambassador from France, your Grace.

MARY (*sits down*). Bid him come in. Good  
morning, Sir de Noailles.

[*Exit* USHER.

NOAILLES (*entering*). A happy morning to your  
Majesty.

MARY. And I should some time have a happy  
morning ;  
I have had none yet. What says the King your  
master?

NOAILLES. Madam, my master hears with much  
alarm,  
That you may marry Philip, Prince of Spain—  
Foreseeing, with whate'er unwillingness,



That if this Philip be the titular king  
Of England, and at war with him, your Grace  
And kingdom will be suck'd into the war,  
Ay, tho' you long for peace ; wherefore, my master,  
If but to prove your Majesty's goodwill,  
Would fain have some fresh treaty drawn between you.

MARY. Why some fresh treaty ? wherefore should  
I do it ?

Sir, if we marry, we shall still maintain  
All former treaties with his Majesty.  
Our royal word for that ! and your good master,  
Pray God he do not be the first to break them,  
Must be content with that ; and so, farewell.

NOAILLES (*going, returns*). I would your answer  
had been other, Madam,  
For I foresee dark days.

MARY. And so do I, sir ;  
Your master works against me in the dark.  
I do believe he help Northumberland  
Against me.

NOAILLES. Nay, pure phantasy, your Grace.  
Why should he move against you ?

MARY. Will you hear why ?  
Mary of Scotland,—for I have not own'd  
My sister, and I will not,—after me  
Is heir of England ; and my royal father,  
To make the crown of Scotland one with ours,

Had mark'd her for my brother Edward's bride ;  
Ay, but your king stole her a babe from Scotland  
In order to betroth her to your Dauphin.

See then :

Mary of Scotland, married to your Dauphin,  
Would make our England, France ;  
Mary of England, joining hands with Spain,  
Would be too strong for France.

Yea, were there issue born to her, Spain and we,  
One crown, might rule the world. There lies your fear.  
That is your drift. You play at hide and seek.  
Show me your faces !

NOAILLES.

Madam, I am amazed :

French, I must needs wish all good things for France.  
That must be pardon'd me ; but I protest  
Your Grace's policy hath a farther flight  
Than mine into the future. We but seek  
Some settled ground for peace to stand upon.

MARY. Well, we will leave all this, sir, to our council.  
Have you seen Philip ever ?

NOAILLES.

Only once.

MARY. Is this like Philip ?

NOAILLES.

Ay, but nobler-looking.

MARY. Hath he the large ability of the Emperor ?

NOAILLES. No, surely.

MARY. I can make allowance for thee,  
Thou speakest of the enemy of thy king.

NOAILLES. Make no allowance for the naked truth.  
He is every way a lesser man than Charles ;  
Stone-hard, ice-cold—no dash of daring in him.

MARY. If cold, his life is pure.

NOAILLES. Why (*smiling*), no, indeed.

MARY. Sayst thou ?

NOAILLES. A very wanton life indeed (*smiling*).

MARY. Your audience is concluded, sir.

[*Exit* NOAILLES.

You cannot

Learn a man's nature from his natural foe.

*Enter* USHER.

Who waits ?

USHER. The Ambassador of Spain, your Grace.

[*Exit*.

*Enter* SIMON RENARD.

MARY (*rising to meet him*). Thou art ever welcome,

Simon Renard. Hast thou

Brought me the letter which thine Emperor promised  
Long since, a formal offer of the hand  
Of Philip ?

RENARD. Nay, your Grace, it hath not reach'd me.  
I know not wherefore—some mischance of flood,  
And broken bridge, or spavin'd horse, or wave  
And wind at their old battle : he must have written.

MARY. But Philip never writes me one poor word.  
Which in his absence had been all my wealth.  
Strange in a wooer !

RENARD. Yet I know the Prince,  
So your king-parliament suffer him to land,  
Yearns to set foot upon your island shore.

MARY. God change the pebble which his kingly  
foot  
First presses into some more costly stone  
Than ever blinded eye. I'll have one mark it  
And bring it me. I'll have it burnish'd firelike ;  
I'll set it round with gold, with pearl, with diamond.  
Let the great angel of the church come with him ;  
Stand on the deck and spread his wings for sail !  
God lay the waves and strow the storms at sea,  
And here at land among the people ! O Renard,  
I am much beset, I am almost in despair.  
Paget is ours. Gardiner perchance is ours ;  
But for our heretic Parliament—

RENARD. O Madam,  
You fly your thoughts like kites. My master, Charles,  
Bad you go softly with your heretics here,  
Until your throne had ceased to tremble. Then  
Spit them like larks for aught I care. Besides,  
When Henry broke the carcase of your church  
To pieces, there were many wolves among you  
Who dragg'd the scatter'd limbs into their den

The Pope would have you make them render these ;  
So would your cousin, Cardinal Pole ; ill counsel !  
These let them keep at present ; stir not yet  
This matter of the Church lands. At his coming  
Your star will rise.

MARY. My star ! a baleful one.  
I see but the black night, and hear the wolf.  
What star ?

RENARD. Your star will be your princely son,  
Heir of this England and the Netherlands !  
And if your wolf the while should howl for more,  
We'll dust him from a bag of Spanish gold.  
I do believe, I have dusted some already,  
That, soon or late, your Parliament is ours.

MARY. Why do they talk so foully of your Prince,  
Renard ?

RENARD. The lot of Princes. To sit high  
Is to be lied about.

MARY. They call him cold,  
Haughty, ay, worse.

RENARD. Why, doubtless, Philip shows  
Some of the bearing of your blue blood—still  
All within measure—nay, it well becomes him.

MARY. Hath he the large ability of his father ?

RENARD. Nay, some believe that he will go be-  
yond him.

MARY. Is this like him ?

RENARD.                   Ay, somewhat ; but your Philip  
Is the most princelike Prince beneath the sun.  
This is a daub to Philip.

MARY.                   Of a pure life ?

RENARD.   As an angel among angels.   Yea, by  
Heaven,  
The text—Your Highness knows it, ‘Whosoever  
Looketh after a woman,’ would not graze  
The Prince of Spain.   You are happy in him there,  
Chaste as your Grace !

MARY.                   I am happy in him there.

RENARD.   And would be altogether happy, Madam,  
So that your sister were but look’d to closer.  
You have sent her from the court, but then she  
goes,

I warrant, not to hear the nightingales,  
But hatch you some new treason in the woods.

MARY.   We have our spies abroad to catch her  
tripping,  
And then if caught, to the Tower.

RENARD.                   The Tower ! the block !  
The word has turn’d your Highness pale ; the thing  
Was no such scarecrow in your father’s time.  
I have heard, the tongue yet quiver’d with the jest  
When the head leapt—so common !   I do think  
To save your crown that it must come to this.

MARY.   No, Renard ; it must never come to this

RENARD. Not yet ; but your old Traitors of the  
Tower—

Why, when you put Northumberland to death,  
The sentence having past upon them all,  
Spared you the Duke of Suffolk, Guildford Dudley,  
Ev'n that young girl who dared to wear your crown ?

MARY. Dared ? nay, not so ; the child obey'd her  
father.

Spite of her tears her father forced it on her.

RENARD. Good Madam, when the Roman wish'd  
to reign,

He slew not him alone who wore the purple,  
But his assessor in the throne, perchance  
A child more innocent than Lady Jane.

MARY. I am English Queen, not Roman Emperor.

RENARD. Yet too much mercy is a want of mercy,  
And wastes more life. Stamp out the fire, or this  
Will smoulder and re-flame, and burn the throne  
Where you should sit with Philip : he will not come  
Till she be gone.

MARY. Indeed, if that were true—  
For Philip comes, one hand in mine, and one  
Steadying the tremulous pillars of the Church—  
But no, no, no. Farewell. I am somewhat faint  
With our long talk. Tho' Queen, I am not Queen  
Of mine own heart, which every now and then  
Beats me half dead : yet stay, this golden chain—

My father on a birthday gave it me,  
And I have broken with my father—take  
And wear it as memorial of a morning  
Which found me full of foolish doubts, and leaves  
me  
As hopeful.

RENARD (*aside*). Whew—the folly of all follies  
Is to be love-sick for a shadow. (*Aloud*) Madam,  
This chains me to your service, not with gold,  
But dearest links of love. Farewell, and trust me,  
Philip is yours. [*Exit.*]

MARY. Mine—but not yet all mine.

*Enter* USHER.

USHER. Your Council is in Session, please your  
Majesty.

MARY. Sir, let them sit. I must have time to  
breathe.

No, say I come. (*Exit* USHER.) I won by boldness  
once.

The Emperor counsell'd me to fly to Flanders.  
I would not ; but a hundred miles I rode,  
Sent out my letters, call'd my friends together,  
Struck home and won.  
And when the Council would not crown me—thought  
To bind me first by oaths I could not keep,



And keep with Christ and conscience—was it bold-  
ness

Or weakness that won there? when I, their Queen,  
Cast myself down upon my knees before them,  
And those hard men brake into woman tears,  
Ev'n Gardiner, all amazed, and in that passion  
Gave me my Crown.

*Enter ALICE.*

Girl; hast thou ever heard  
Slanders against Prince Philip in our Court?

ALICE. What slanders? I, your Grace; no, never.

MARY. Nothing?

ALICE. Never, your Grace.

MARY. See that you neither hear them nor re-  
peat!

ALICE (*aside*). Good Lord! but I have heard a  
thousand such.

Ay, and repeated them as often—mum!

Why comes that old fox-Fleming back again?

*Enter RENARD.*

RENARD. Madam, I scarce had left your Grace's  
presence

Before I chanced upon the messenger

Who brings that letter which we waited for—

The formal offer of Prince Philip's hand.

It craves an instant answer, Ay or No.

MARY. An instant Ay or No ! the Council sits.  
Give it me quick.

ALICE (*stepping before her*). Your Highness is all  
trembling.

MARY. Make way. [*Exit into the Council Chamber.*]

ALICE. O, Master Renard, Master Renard,  
If you have falsely painted your fine Prince ;  
Praised, where you should have blamed him, I pray  
God

No woman ever love you, Master Renard.  
It breaks my heart to hear her moan at night  
As tho' the nightmare never left her bed.

RENARD. My pretty maiden, tell me, did you  
ever  
Sigh for a beard ?

ALICE. That's not a pretty question.

RENARD. Not prettily put ? I mean, my pretty  
maiden,  
A pretty man for such a pretty maiden.

ALICE. My Lord of Devon is a pretty man.  
I hate him. Well, but if I have, what then ?

RENARD. Then, pretty maiden, you should know  
that whether  
A wind be warm or cold, it serves to fan  
A kindled fire.

ALICE. According to the song.

His friends would praise him, I believed 'em,  
His foes would blame him, and I scorn'd 'em,  
His friends—as Angels I received 'em,  
His foes—the Devil had suborn'd 'em.

RENARD. Peace, pretty maiden.

I hear them stirring in the Council Chamber.  
Lord Paget's 'Ay' is sure—who else? and yet,  
They are all too much at odds to close at once  
In one full-throated No! Her Highness comes.

*Enter MARY.*

ALICE. How deathly pale!—a chair, your High-  
ness. [*Bringing one to the QUEEN.*

RENARD. Madam,  
The Council?

MARY. Ay! My Philip is all mine.  
[*Sinks into chair, half fainting.*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—ALINGTON CASTLE.

SIR THOMAS WYATT. I do not hear from Carew  
or the Duke

Of Suffolk, and till then I should not move.  
The Duke hath gone to Leicester ; Carew stirs  
In Devon : that fine porcelain Courtenay,  
Save that he fears he might be crack'd in using,  
(I have known a semi-madman in my time  
So fancy-ridd'n) should be in Devon too.

*Enter WILLIAM.*

News abroad, William ?

WILLIAM. None so new, Sir Thomas, and none  
so old, Sir Thomas. No new news that Philip  
comes to wed Mary, no old news that all men hate  
it. Old Sir Thomas would have hated it. The  
bells are ringing at Maidstone. Doesn't your worship  
hear ?

WYATT. Ay, for the Saints are come to reign again.  
Most like it is a Saint's-day. There's no call  
As yet for me ; so in this pause, before  
The mine be fired, it were a pious work  
To string my father's sonnets, left about  
Like loosely-scatter'd jewels, in fair order,  
And head them with a lamer rhyme of mine,  
To grace his memory.

WILLIAM. Ay, why not, Sir Thomas ? He was a  
fine courtier, he ; Queen Anne loved him. All the  
women loved him. I loved him, I was in Spain with  
him. I couldn't eat in Spain, I couldn't sleep in  
Spain. I hate Spain, Sir Thomas.

WYATT. But thou could'st drink in Spain if I  
remember.

WILLIAM. Sir Thomas, we may grant the wine.  
Old Sir Thomas always granted the wine.

WYATT. Hand me the casket with my father's  
sonnets.

WILLIAM. Ay—sonnets—a fine courtier of the old  
Court, old Sir Thomas. [Exit.

WYATT. Courtier of many courts, he loved the  
more

His own gray towers, plain life and letter'd peace,  
To read and rhyme in solitary fields,  
The lark above, the nightingale below,  
And answer them in song. The sire begets

Not half his likeness in the son. I fail  
Where he was fullest : yet—to write it down.

[*He writes.*]

*Re-enter WILLIAM.*

WILLIAM. There *is* news, there *is* news, and no  
call for sonnet-sorting now, nor for sonnet-making  
either, but ten thousand men on Penenden Heath all  
calling after your worship, and your worship's name  
heard into Maidstone market, and your worship the  
first man in Kent and Christendom, for the Queen's  
down, and the world's up, and your worship a-top of it.

WYATT. Inverted Æsop—mountain out of mouse.  
Say for ten thousand ten—and pothouse knaves,  
Brain-dizzied with a draught of morning ale.

*Enter ANTONY KNYVETT.*

WILLIAM. Here's Antony Knyvett.

KNYVETT. Look you, Master Wyatt,  
Tear up that woman's work there.

WYATT. No ; not these,  
Dumb children of my father, that will speak  
When I and thou and all rebellions lie  
Dead bodies without voice. Song flies you know  
For ages.

KNYVETT. Tut, your sonnet's a flying ant,  
Wing'd for a moment.

WYATT. Well, for mine own work,  
[*Tearing the paper.*

It lies there in six pieces at your feet ;  
For all that I can carry it in my head.

KNYVETT. If you can carry your head upon your  
shoulders.

WYATT. I fear you come to carry it off my  
shoulders,

And sonnet-making's safer.

KNYVETT. Why, good Lord,  
Write you as many sonnets as you will.  
Ay, but not now ; what, have you eyes, ears, brains ?  
This Philip and the black-faced swarms of Spain,  
The hardest, cruellest people in the world,  
Come locusting upon us, eat us up,  
Confiscate lands, goods, money—Wyatt, Wyatt,  
Wake, or the stout old island will become  
A rotten limb of Spain. They roar for you  
On Penenden Heath, a thousand of them—more—  
All arm'd, waiting a leader ; there's no glory  
Like his who saves his country : and you sit  
Sing-singing here ; but, if I'm any judge,  
By God, you are as poor a poet, Wyatt,  
As a good soldier.

WYATT. You as poor a critic  
As an honest friend : you stroke me on one cheek,  
Buffet the other. Come, you bluster, Antony !

You know I know all this. I must not move  
Until I hear from Carew and the Duke.  
I fear the mine is fired before the time.

KNYVETT (*showing a paper*). But here's some  
Hebrew. Faith, I half forgot it.

Look ; can you make it English ? A strange youth  
Suddenly thrust it on me, whisper'd, 'Wyatt,'  
And whisking round a corner, show'd his back  
Before I read his face.

WYATT. Ha ! Courtenay's cipher. [*Reads.*

'Sir Peter Carew fled to France : it is thought the  
Duke will be taken. I am with you still ; but, for  
appearance sake, stay with the Queen. Gardiner  
knows, but the Council are all at odds, and the Queen  
hath no force for resistance. Move, if you move, at  
once.'

Is Peter Carew fled ? Is the Duke taken ?  
Down scabbard, and out sword ! and let Rebellion  
Roar till throne rock, and crown fall. No ; not that ;  
But we will teach Queen Mary how to reign.  
Who are those that shout below there ?

KNYVETT. Why, some fifty  
That follow'd me from Penenden Heath in hope  
To hear you speak.

WYATT. Open the window, Knyvett ;  
The mine is fired, and I will speak to them.



Men of Kent ; England of England ; you that have kept your old customs upright, while all the rest of England bow'd theirs to the Norman, the cause that hath brought us together is not the cause of a county or a shire, but of this England, in whose crown our Kent is the fairest jewel. Philip shall not wed Mary ; and ye have called me to be your leader. I know Spain. I have been there with my father ; I have seen them in their own land ; have marked the haughtiness of their nobles ; the cruelty of their priests. If this man marry our Queen, however the Council and the Commons may fence round his power with restriction, he will be King, King of England, my masters ; and the Queen, and the laws, and the people, his slaves. What ? shall we have Spain on the throne and in the parliament ; Spain in the pulpit and on the law-bench ; Spain in all the great offices of state ; Spain in our ships, in our forts, in our houses, in our beds ?

CROWD. No ! no ! no Spain !

WILLIAM. No Spain in our beds—that were worse than all. I have been there with old Sir Thomas, and the beds I know. I hate Spain.

A PEASANT. But, Sir Thomas, must we levy war against the Queen's Grace ?

WYATT. No, my friend ; war *for* the Queen's Grace—to save her from herself and Philip—war

against Spain. And think not we shall be alone—thousands will flock to us. The Council, the Court itself, is on our side. The Lord Chancellor himself is on our side. The King of France is with us; the King of Denmark is with us; the world is with us—war against Spain! And if we move not now, yet it will be known that we have moved; and if Philip come to be King, O, my God! the rope, the rack, the thumb-screw, the stake, the fire. If we move not now, Spain moves, bribes our nobles with her gold, and creeps, creeps snake-like about our legs till we cannot move at all; and ye know, my masters, that wherever Spain hath ruled she hath wither'd all beneath her. Look at the New World—a paradise made hell; the red man, that good helpless creature, starved, maim'd, flogg'd, flay'd, burn'd, boil'd, buried alive, worried by dogs; and here, nearer home, the Netherlands, Sicily, Naples, Lombardy. I say no more—only this, their lot is yours. Forward to London with me! forward to London! If ye love your liberties or your skins, forward to London!

CROWD. Forward to London! A Wyatt! a Wyatt!

WYATT. But first to Rochester, to take the guns  
From out the vessels lying in the river.  
Then on.

A PEASANT. Ay, but I fear we be too few, Sir  
Thomas.

WYATT. Not many yet. The world as yet, my friend,  
Is not half-waked ; but every parish tower  
Shall clang and clash alarum as we pass,  
And pour along the land, and swoll'n and fed  
With indraughts and side-currents, in full force  
Roll upon London.

CROWD. A Wyatt ! a Wyatt ! Forward !

KNYVETT. Wyatt, shall we proclaim Elizabeth ?

WYATT. I'll think upon it, Knyvett.

KNYVETT. Or Lady Jane ?

WYATT. No, poor soul ; no.

Ah, gray old castle of Alington, green field  
Beside the brimming Medway, it may chance  
That I shall never look upon you more.

KNYVETT. Come, now, you're sonnetting again.

WYATT. Not I.

I'll have my head set higher in the state ;  
Or—if the Lord God will it—on the stake. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.—GUILDHALL.

SIR THOMAS WHITE (The Lord Mayor), LORD  
WILLIAM HOWARD, SIR RALPH BAGENHALL,  
ALDERMEN *and* CITIZENS.

WHITE. I trust the Queen comes hither with her  
guards.

HOWARD. Ay, all in arms.

*[Several of the citizens move hastily out of the hall.]*

Why do they hurry out there?

WHITE. My Lord, cut out the rotten from your apple,

Your apple eats the better. Let them go.

They go like those old Pharisees in John

Convicted by their conscience, arrant cowards,

Or tamperers with that treason out of Kent.

When will her Grace be here?

HOWARD.

In some few minutes.

She will address your guilds and companies.

I have striven in vain to raise a man for her.

But help her in this exigency, make

Your city loyal, and be the mightiest man

This day in England.

WHITE.

I am Thomas White.

Few things have fail'd to which I set my will.

I do my most and best.

HOWARD.

You know that after

The Captain Brett, who went with your train bands

To fight with Wyatt, had gone over to him

With all his men, the Queen in that distress

Sent Cornwallis and Hastings to the traitor,

Feigning to treat with him about her marriage—

Know too what Wyatt said.

WHITE.

He'd sooner be,

While this same marriage question was being argued,  
Trusted than trust—the scoundrel—and demanded  
Possession of her person and the Tower.

HOWARD. And four of her poor Council too, my  
Lord,  
As hostages.

WHITE. I know it. What do and say  
Your Council at this hour?

HOWARD. I will trust you.  
We fling ourselves on you, my Lord. The Council,  
The Parliament as well, are troubled waters ;  
And yet like waters of the fen they know not  
Which way to flow. All hangs on her address,  
And upon you, Lord Mayor.

WHITE. How look'd the city  
When now you past it? Quiet?

HOWARD. Like our Council,  
Your city is divided. As we past,  
Some hail'd, some hiss'd us. There were citizens  
Stood each before his shut-up booth, and look'd  
As grim and grave as from a funeral.  
And here a knot of ruffians all in rags,  
With execrating execrable eyes,  
Glared at the citizen. Here was a young mother,  
Her face on flame, her red hair all blown back,  
She shrilling 'Wyatt,' while the boy she held  
Mimick'd and piped her 'Wyatt,' as red as she

In hair and cheek ; and almost elbowing her,  
So close they stood, another, mute as death,  
And white as her own milk ; her babe in arms  
Had felt the faltering of his mother's heart,  
And look'd as bloodless. Here a pious Catholic,  
Mumbling and mixing up in his scared prayers  
Heaven and earth's Maries ; over his bow'd shoulder  
Scowl'd that world-hated and world-hating beast,  
A haggard Anabaptist. Many such groups.  
The names of Wyatt, Elizabeth, Courtenay,  
Nay the Queen's right to reign—'fore God, the rogues—  
Were freely buzzed among them. So I say  
Your city is divided, and I fear  
One scruple, this or that way, of success  
Would turn it thither. Wherefore now the Queen  
In this low pulse and palsy of the state,  
Bad me to tell you that she counts on you  
And on myself as her two hands ; on you,  
In your own city, as her right, my Lord,  
For you are loyal.

WHITE.

Am I Thomas White ?

One word before she comes. Elizabeth—  
Her name is much abused among these traitors.  
Where is she ? She is loved by all of us.  
I scarce have heart to mingle in this matter,  
If she should be mishandled.

HOWARD.

No ; she shall not.

The Queen had written her word to come to court :  
Methought I smelt out Renard in the letter,  
And fearing for her, sent a secret missive,  
Which told her to be sick. Happily or not,  
It found her sick indeed.

WHITE.                      God send her well ;  
Here comes her Royal Grace.

*Enter GUARDS, MARY and GARDINER. SIR THOMAS WHITE leads her to a raised seat on the dais.*

WHITE. I, the Lord Mayor, and these our  
companies  
And guilds of London, gathered here, beseech  
Your Highness to accept our lowliest thanks  
For your most princely presence ; and we pray  
That we, your true and loyal citizens,  
From your own royal lips, at once may know  
The wherefore of this coming, and so learn  
Your royal will, and do it.—I, Lord Mayor  
Of London, and our guilds and companies.

MARY. In mine own person am I come to you,  
To tell you what indeed ye see and know,  
How traitorously these rebels out of Kent  
Have made strong head against ourselves and you.  
They would not have me wed the Prince of Spain ;  
That was their pretext—so they spake at first—

But we sent divers of our Council to them,  
And by their answers to the question ask'd,  
It doth appear this marriage is the least  
Of all their quarrel.

They have betrayed the treason of their hearts :  
Seek to possess our person, hold our Tower,  
Place and displace our councillors, and use  
Both us and them according as they will.  
Now what I am ye know right well—your Queen ;  
To whom, when I was wedded to the realm  
And the realm's laws (the spousal ring whereof,  
Not ever to be laid aside, I wear  
Upon this finger), ye did promise full  
Allegiance and obedience to the death.  
Ye know my father was the rightful heir  
Of England, and his right came down to me  
Corroborate by your acts of Parliament :  
And as ye were most loving unto him,  
So doubtless will ye show yourselves to me.  
Wherefore, ye will not brook that anyone  
Should seize our person, occupy our state,  
More specially a traitor so presumptuous  
As this same Wyatt, who hath tamper'd with  
A public ignorance, and, under colour  
Of such a cause as hath no colour, seeks  
To bend the laws to his own will, and yield  
Full scope to persons rascal and forlorn,



To make free spoil and havock of your goods.  
Now as your Prince, I say,  
I, that was never mother, cannot tell  
How mothers love their children ; yet, methinks,  
A prince as naturally may love his people  
As these their children ; and be sure your Queen  
So loves you, and so loving, needs must deem  
This love by you return'd as heartily ;  
And thro' this common knot and bond of love,  
Doubt not they will be speedily overthrown.  
As to this marriage, ye shall understand  
We made thereto no treaty of ourselves,  
And set no foot theretoward unadvised  
Of all our Privy Council ; furthermore,  
This marriage had the assent of those to whom  
The king, my father, did commit his trust ;  
Who not alone esteem'd it honourable,  
But for the wealth and glory of our realm,  
And all our loving subjects, most expedient.  
As to myself,  
I am not so set on wedlock as to choose  
But where I list, nor yet so amorous  
That I must needs be husbanded ; I thank God,  
I have lived a virgin, and I noway doubt  
But that with God's grace, I can live so still.  
Yet if it might please God that I should leave  
Some fruit of mine own body after me,

To be your king, ye would rejoice thereat,  
And it would be your comfort, as I trust ;  
And truly, if I either thought or knew  
This marriage should bring loss or danger to you,  
My subjects, or impair in any way  
This royal state of England, I would never  
Consent thereto, nor marry while I live ;  
Moreover, if this marriage should not seem,  
Before our own High Court of Parliament,  
To be of rich advantage to our realm,  
We will refrain, and not alone from this,  
Likewise from any other, out of which  
Looms the least chance of peril to our realm.  
Wherefore be bold, and with your lawful Prince  
Stand fast against our enemies and yours,  
And fear them not. I fear them not. My Lord,  
I leave Lord William Howard in your city,  
To guard and keep you whole and safe from all  
The spoil and sackage aim'd at by these rebels,  
Who mouth and foam against the Prince of Spain.

VOICES. Long live Queen Mary !

Down with Wyatt !

The Queen !

WHITE. Three voices from our guilds and companies !

You are shy and proud like Englishmen, my masters,  
And will not trust your voices. Understand :

Your lawful Prince hath come to cast herself  
On loyal hearts and bosoms, hoped to fall  
Into the wide-spread arms of fealty,  
And finds you statues. Speak at once—and all !  
For whom ?

Our sovereign Lady by King Harry's will ;  
The Queen of England—or the Kentish Squire ?  
I know you loyal. Speak ! in the name of God !  
The Queen of England or the rabble of Kent ?  
The reeking dungfork master of the mace !  
Your havings wasted by the scythe and spade—  
Your rights and charters hobnail'd into slush—  
Your houses fired—your gutters bubbling blood——

ACCLAMATION. No ! No ! The Queen ! the  
Queen !

WHITE. Your Highness hears  
This burst and bass of loyal harmony,  
And how we each and all of us abhor  
The venomous, bestial, devilish revolt  
Of Thomas Wyatt. Hear us now make oath  
To raise your Highness thirty thousand men,  
And arm and strike as with one hand, and brush  
This Wyatt from our shoulders, like a flea  
That might have leapt upon us unawares.  
Swear with me, noble fellow-citizens, all,  
With all your trades, and guilds, and companies.

CITIZENS. We swear !

MARY. We thank your Lordship and your loyal  
city. [*Exit MARY attended.*]

WHITE. I trust this day, thro' God, I have saved  
the crown.

FIRST ALDERMAN. Ay, so my Lord of Pembroke  
in command

Of all her force be safe ; but there are doubts.

SECOND ALDERMAN. I hear that Gardiner, coming  
with the Queen,

And meeting Pembroke, bent to his saddle-bow,

As if to win the man by flattering him.

*Is he so safe to fight upon her side ?*

FIRST ALDERMAN. If not, there's no man safe.

WHITE. Yes, Thomas White.

I am safe enough ; no man need flatter me.

SECOND ALDERMAN. Nay, no man need ; but did  
you mark our Queen ?

The colour freely play'd into her face,

And the half sight which makes her look so stern,

Seem'd thro' that dim dilated world of hers,

To read our faces ; I have never seen her

So queenly or so goodly.

WHITE. Courage, sir,

*That* makes or man or woman look their goodliest.

Die like the torn fox dumb, but never whine

Like that poor heart, Northumberland, at the  
block.

BAGENHALL. The man had children, and he whined for those.

Methinks most men are but poor-hearted, else  
Should we so doat on courage, were it commoner?  
The Queen stands up, and speaks for her own self;  
And all men cry, She is queenly, she is goodly.  
Yet she's no goodlier; tho' my Lord Mayor here,  
By his own rule, he hath been so bold to-day,  
Should look more goodly than the rest of us.

WHITE. Goodly? I feel most goodly heart and hand,

And strong to throw ten Wyatts and all Kent.  
Ha! ha! sir; but you jest; I love it: a jest  
In time of danger shows the pulses even.  
Be merry! yet, Sir Ralph, you look but sad.  
I dare avouch you'd stand up for yourself,  
Tho' all the world should bay like winter wolves.

BAGENHALL. Who knows? the man is proven by the hour.

WHITE. The man should make the hour, not this the man;

And Thomas White will prove this Thomas Wyatt,  
And he will prove an Iden to this Cade,  
And he will play the Walworth to this Wat;  
Come, sirs, we prate; hence all—gather your men—

Myself must bustle. Wyatt comes to Southwark;

I'll have the drawbridge hewn into the Thames,  
And see the citizens arm'd. Good dâÿ ; good day.

[*Exit* WHITE.

BAGENHALL. One of much outdoor bluster.

HOWARD. For all that,  
Most honest, brave, and skilful ; and his wealth  
A fountain of perennial alms—his fault  
So thoroughly to believe in his own self.

BAGENHALL. Yet thoroughly to believe in one's  
own self,  
So one's own self be thorough, were to do  
Great things, my Lord.

HOWARD. It may be.

BAGENHALL. I have heard  
One of your Council fleer and jeer at him.

HOWARD. The nursery-cocker'd child will jeer at  
aught  
That may seem strange beyond his nursery.  
The statesman that shall jeer and fleer at men,  
Makes enemies for himself and for his king ;  
And if he jeer not seeing the true man  
Behind his folly, he is thrice the fool ;  
And if he see the man and still will jeer,  
He is child and fool, and traitor to the State.  
Who is he ? let me shun him.

BAGENHALL. Nay, my Lord,  
He is damn'd enough already.

HOWARD.

I must set

The guard at Ludgate. Fare you well, Sir Ralph.

BAGENHALL. 'Who knows?' I am for England.

But who knows,

That knows the Queen, the Spaniard, and the Pope,

Whether I be for Wyatt, or the Queen? [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.—LONDON BRIDGE.

*Enter* SIR THOMAS WYATT *and* BRETT.

WYATT. Brett, when the Duke of Norfolk moved  
against us

Thou cried'st 'A Wyatt!' and flying to our side

Left his all bare, for which I love thee, Brett.

Have for thine asking aught that I can give,

For thro' thine help we are come to London Bridge ;

But how to cross it balks me. I fear we cannot.

BRETT. Nay, hardly, save by boat, swimming, or  
wings.

WYATT. Last night I climb'd into the gate-house,  
Brett,

And scared the gray old porter and his wife.

And then I crept along the gloom and saw

They had hewn the drawbridge down into the river

It roll'd as black as death ; and that same tide

Which, coming with our coming, seem'd to smile





traitor Thomas Wyatt shall have a hundred pounds for reward.'

MAN. Is that it? That's a big lot of money.

WYATT. Ay, ay, my friend; not read it? 'tis not written

Half plain enough. Give me a piece of paper!

[*Writes 'THOMAS WYATT' large.*

There, any man can read that. [*Sticks it in his cap.*

BRETT. But that's foolhardy.

WYATT. No! boldness, which will give my followers boldness.

*Enter MAN with a prisoner.*

MAN. We found him, your worship, a plundering o' Bishop Winchester's house; he says he's a poor gentleman.

WYATT. Gentleman! a thief! Go hang him.  
Shall we make

Those that we come to serve our sharpest foes?

BRETT. Sir Thomas—

WYATT. Hang him, I say.

BRETT. Wyatt, but now you promised me a boon.

WYATT. Ay, and I warrant this fine fellow's life.

BRETT. Ev'n so; he was my neighbour once in Kent.

He's poor enough, has drunk and gambled out

All that he had, and gentleman he was.

We have been glad together ; let him live.

WYATT. He has gambled for his life, and lost, he hangs.

No, no, my word's my word. Take thy poor gentleman !

Gamble thyself at once out of my sight,

Or I will dig thee with my dagger. Away !

Women and children !

*Enter a Crowd of WOMEN and CHILDREN.*

FIRST WOMAN. O Sir Thomas, Sir Thomas, pray you go away, Sir Thomas, or you'll make the White Tower a black 'un for us this blessed day. He'll be the death on us ; and you'll set the Devil's Tower a-spitting, and he'll smash all our bits o' things worse than Philip o' Spain.

SECOND WOMAN. Don't ye now go to think that we be for Philip o' Spain.

THIRD WOMAN. No, we know that ye be come to kill the Queen, and we'll pray for you all on our bended knees. But o' God's mercy don't ye kill the Queen here, Sir Thomas ; look ye, here's little Dickon, and little Robin, and little Jenny—though she's but a side-cousin—and all on our knees, we pray you to kill the Queen further off, Sir Thomas.

WYATT. My friends, I have not come to kill the  
Queen

Or here or there : I come to save you all,  
And I'll go further off.

CROWD. Thanks, Sir Thomas, we be beholden to  
you, and we'll pray for you on our bended knees till  
our lives' end.

WYATT. Be happy, I am your friend. To King-  
ston, forward ! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—ROOM IN THE GATEHOUSE OF  
WESTMINSTER PALACE.

MARY, ALICE, GARDINER, RENARD, LADIES.

GARDINER. Their cry is, Philip never shall be king.

MARY. Lord Pembroke in command of all our force  
Will front their cry and shatter them into dust.

ALICE. Was not Lord Pembroke with Northum-  
berland ?

O madam, if this Pembroke should be false ?

MARY. No, girl ; most brave and loyal, brave and  
loyal.

His breaking with Northumberland broke Northum-  
berland.

At the park gate he hovers with our guards.

These Kentish ploughmen cannot break the guards.

*Enter MESSENGER.*

MESSENGER. Wyatt, your Grace, hath broken  
thro' the guards  
And gone to Ludgate.

GARDINER. Madam, I much fear  
That all is lost ; but we can save your Grace.  
The river still is free. I do beseech you,  
There yet is time, take boat and pass to Windsor.

MARY. I pass to Windsor and I lose my crown.

GARDINER. Pass, then, I pray your Highness, to  
the Tower.

MARY. I shall but be their prisoner in the  
Tower.

CRIES *without*. The traitor ! treason ! Pembroke !

LADIES. Treason ! treason !

MARY. Peace.

False to Northumberland, is he false to me ?  
Bear witness, Renard, that I live and die  
The true and faithful bride of Philip—A sound  
Of feet and voices thickening hither—blows—  
Hark, there is battle at the palace gates,  
And I will out upon the gallery.

LADIES. No, no, your Grace ; see there the arrows  
flying.

MARY. I am Harry's daughter, Tudor, and not  
fear. [*Goes out on the gallery.*]

The guards are all driven in, skulk into corners  
Like rabbits to their holes. A gracious guard  
Truly ; shame on them ! they have shut the gates !

*Enter* SIR ROBERT SOUTHWELL.

SOUTHWELL. The porter, please your Grace, hath  
shut the gates  
On friend and foe. Your gentlemen-at-arms,  
If this be not your Grace's order, cry  
To have the gates set wide again, and they  
With their good battleaxes will do you right  
Against all traitors.

MARY. They are the flower of England ; set the  
gates wide. [*Exit* SOUTHWELL.

*Enter* COURTENAY.

COURTENAY. All lost, all lost, all yielded ! A  
barge, a barge !  
The Queen must to the Tower.

MARY. Whence come you, sir ?

COURTENAY. From Charing Cross ; the rebels  
broke us there,  
And I sped hither with what haste I might  
To save my royal cousin.

MARY. Where is Pembroke ?

COURTENAY. I left him somewhere in the thick  
of it.

MARY. Left him and fled ; and thou that would'st  
be King,  
And hast nor heart nor honour. I myself  
Will down into the battle and there bide  
The upshot of my quarrel, or die with those  
That are no cowards and no Courtenays.

COURTENAY. I do not love your Grace should  
call me coward.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

MESSENGER. Over, your Grace, all crush'd ; the  
brave Lord William  
Thrust him from Ludgate, and the traitor flying  
To Temple Bar, there by Sir Maurice Berkeley  
Was taken prisoner.

MARY. To the Tower with *him* !

MESSENGER. 'Tis said he told Sir Maurice there  
was one  
Cognisant of this, and party thereunto,  
My Lord of Devon.

MARY. To the Tower with *him* !

COURTENAY. O la, the Tower, the Tower, always  
the Tower,  
I shall grow into it—I shall be the Tower.

MARY. Your Lordship may not have so long to wait.  
Remove him !

COURTENAY. La, to whistle out my life,  
And carve my coat upon the walls again !

[*Exit COURTENAY guarded.*]

MESSENGER. Also this Wyatt did confess the  
Princess  
Cognisant thereof, and party thereunto.

MARY. What ? whom—whom did you say ?

MESSENGER. Elizabeth,  
Your Royal sister.

MARY. To the Tower with *her* !  
My foes are at my feet and I am Queen.

[*GARDINER and her LADIES kneel to her.*]

GARDINER (*rising*). There let them lie, your foot-  
stool ! (*Aside.*) Can I strike  
Elizabeth ?—not now and save the life  
Of Devon : if I save him, he and his  
Are bound to me—may strike hereafter. (*Aloud.*)  
Madam,

What Wyatt said, or what they said he said,  
Cries of the moment and the street—

MARY. He said it.

GARDINER. Your courts of justice will determine  
that.

RENARD (*advancing*). I trust by this your High-  
ness will allow  
Some spice of wisdom in my telling you,  
When last we talk'd, that Philip would not come





## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—THE CONDUIT IN GRACECHURCH,

*Painted with the Nine Worthies, among them King Henry VIII. holding a book, on it inscribed 'Verbum Dei.'*

*Enter* SIR RALPH BAGENHALL *and* SIR THOMAS STAFFORD.

BAGENHALL. A hundred here and hundreds  
hang'd in Kent.

The tigress had unsheath'd her nails at last,  
And Renard and the Chancellor sharpen'd them.  
In every London street a gibbet stood.  
They are down to-day. Here by this house was  
one ;

The traitor husband dangled at the door,  
And when the traitor wife came out for bread  
To still the petty treason therewithin,  
Her cap would brush his heels.

STAFFORD.

It is Sir Ralph,

And muttering to himself as heretofore.

Sir, see you aught up yonder ?

BAGENHALL. I miss something.

The tree that only bears dead fruit is gone.

STAFFORD. What tree, sir ?

BAGENHALL. Well, the tree in Virgil, sir,  
That bears not its own apples.

STAFFORD. What ! the gallows ?

BAGENHALL. Sir, this dead fruit was ripening  
overmuch,  
And had to be removed lest living Spain  
Should sicken at dead England.

STAFFORD. Not so dead,  
But that a shock may rouse her.

BAGENHALL. I believe  
Sir Thomas Stafford ?

STAFFORD. I am ill disguised.

BAGENHALL. Well, are you not in peril here ?

STAFFORD. I think so.  
I came to feel the pulse of England, whether  
It beats hard at this marriage. Did you see it ?

BAGENHALL. Stafford, I am a sad man and a  
serious.  
Far liefer had I in my country hall  
Been reading some old book, with mine old hound  
Couch'd at my hearth, and mine old flask of wine  
Beside me, than have seen it : yet I saw it.

STAFFORD. Good, was it splendid?

BAGENHALL. Ay, if Dukes, and Earls,  
And Counts, and sixty Spanish cavaliers,  
Some six or seven Bishops, diamonds, pearls,  
That royal commonplace too, cloth of gold,  
Could make it so.

STAFFORD. And what was Mary's dress?

BAGENHALL. Good faith, I was too sorry for the  
woman  
To mark the dress. She wore red shoes!

STAFFORD. Red shoes!

BAGENHALL. Scarlet, as if her feet were wash'd in  
blood,  
As if she had waded in it.

STAFFORD. Were your eyes  
So bashful that you look'd no higher?

BAGENHALL. A diamond,  
And Philip's gift, as proof of Philip's love,  
Who hath not any for any,—tho' a true one,  
Blazed false upon her heart.

STAFFORD. But this proud Prince—

BAGENHALL. Nay, he is King, you know, the  
King of Naples.

The father ceded Naples, that the son  
Being a King, might wed a Queen—O he  
Flamed in brocade—white satin his trunk-hose,  
Inwrought with silver,—on his neck a collar,

Gold, thick with diamonds ; hanging down from this  
The Golden Fleece—and round his knee, misplaced,  
Our English Garter, studded with great emeralds,  
Rubies, I know not what. Have you had enough  
Of all this gear ?

STAFFORD.        Ay, since you hate the telling it.  
How look'd the Queen ?

BAGENHALL.        No fairer for her jewels.  
And I could see that as the new-made couple  
Came from the Minster, moving side by side  
Beneath one canopy, ever and anon  
She cast on him a vassal smile of love,  
Which Philip with a glance of some distaste,  
Or so methought, return'd. I may be wrong, sir.  
This marriage will not hold.

STAFFORD.        I think with you.  
The King of France will help to break it.

BAGENHALL.        France !  
We once had half of France, and hurl'd our battles  
Into the heart of Spain ; but England now  
Is but a ball chuck'd between France and Spain,  
His in whose hand she drops ; Harry of Bolingbroke  
Had holpen Richard's tottering throne to stand,  
Could Harry have foreseen that all our nobles  
Would perish on the civil slaughter-field,  
And leave the people naked to the crown,  
And the crown naked to the people ; the crown

Female, too ! Sir, no woman's regimen  
Can save us. We are fallen, and as I think,  
Never to rise again.

STAFFORD.                You are too black-blooded.  
I'd make a move myself to hinder that :  
I know some lusty fellows there in France.

BAGENHALL.    You would but make us weaker,  
                         Thomas Stafford.  
Wyatt was a good soldier, yet he fail'd,  
And strengthen'd Philip.

STAFFORD.                Did not his last breath  
Clear Courtenay and the Princess from the charge  
Of being his co-rebels ?

BAGENHALL.            Ay, but then  
What such a one as Wyatt says is nothing :  
We have no men among us. The new Lords  
Are quieted with their sop of Abbeylands,  
And ev'n before the Queen's face Gardiner buys them  
With Philip's gold. All greed, no faith, no courage !  
Why, ev'n the haughty prince, Northumberland,  
The leader of our Reformation, knelt  
And blubber'd like a lad, and on the scaffold  
Recanted, and resold himself to Rome.

STAFFORD.    I swear you do your country wrong,  
                         Sir Ralph.  
I know a set of exiles over there,  
Dare-devils, that would eat fire and spit it out

At Philip's beard : they pillage Spain already.  
The French King winks at it. An hour will come  
When they will sweep her from the seas. No men ?  
Did not Lord Suffolk die like a true man ?  
Is not Lord William Howard a true man ?  
Yea, you yourself, altho' you are black-blooded :  
And I, by God, believe myself a man.  
Ay, even in the church there is a man—  
Cranmer.

Fly would he not, when all men bad him fly.  
And what a letter he wrote against the Pope !  
There's a brave man, if any.

BAGENHALL. Ay ; if it hold.

CROWD (*coming on*). God save their Graces !

STAFFORD. Bagenhall, I see  
The Tudor green and white. (*Trumpets.*) They are  
coming now.

And here's a crowd as thick as herring-shoals.

BAGENHALL. Be limpets to this pillar, or we are torn  
Down the strong wave of brawlers.

CROWD. God save their Graces !

[*Procession of Trumpeters, Javelin-men, etc. ; then  
Spanish and Flemish Nobles intermingled.*]

STAFFORD. Worth seeing, Bagenhall ! These black  
dog-Dons  
Garb themselves bravely. Who's the long-face there,  
Looks very Spain of very Spain ?

BAGENHALL.                      The Duke  
Of Alva, an iron soldier.

STAFFORD.                      And the Dutchman,  
Now laughing at some jest?

BAGENHALL.	William of Orange,
William the Silent.	

STAFFORD.           Why do they call him so?

BAGENHALL. He keeps, they say, some secret that  
may cost  
Philip his life.

STAFFORD. But then he looks so merry.

BAGENHALL. I cannot tell you why they call him so.

[*The KING and QUEEN pass, attended by Peers of the Realm, Officers of State, etc. Cannon shot off.*]

CROWD. Philip and Mary, Philip and Mary !  
Long live the King and Queen, Philip and Mary !

STAFFORD. They smile as if content with one another.

BAGENHALL. A smile abroad is oft a scowl at home.

[KING and QUEEN pass on. Procession.

FIRST CITIZEN. I thought this Philip had been one of those black devils of Spain, but he hath a yellow beard.

SECOND CITIZEN. Not red like Iscariot's.

FIRST CITIZEN. Like a carrot's, as thou say'st, and

English carrot's better than Spanish licorice ; but I thought he was a beast.

THIRD CITIZEN. Certain I had heard that every Spaniard carries a tail like a devil under his trunk-hose.

TAILOR. Ay, but see what trunk-hoses ! Lord ! they be fine ; I never stitch'd none such. They make amends for the tails.

FOURTH CITIZEN. Tut ! every Spanish priest will tell you that all English heretics have tails.

FIFTH CITIZEN. Death and the Devil—if he find I have one—

FOURTH CITIZEN. Lo ! thou hast call'd them up ! here they come—a pale horse for Death and Gardiner for the Devil.

*Enter GARDINER (turning back from the procession).*

GARDINER. Knave, wilt thou wear thy cap before the Queen ?

MAN. My Lord, I stand so squeezed among the crowd

I cannot lift my hands unto my head.

GARDINER. Knock off his cap there, some of you about him !

See there be others that can use their hands.

Thou art one of Wyatt's men ?

MAN.

No, my Lord, no.



GARDINER. Thy name, thou knave?

MAN. I am nobody, my Lord.

GARDINER (*shouting*). God's passion! knave, thy name?

MAN. I have ears to hear.

GARDINER. Ay, rascal, if I leave thee ears to hear.  
Find out his name and bring it me (*to ATTENDANT*).

ATTENDANT. Ay, my Lord.

GARDINER. Knave, thou shalt lose thine ears and  
find thy tongue,  
And shalt be thankful if I leave thee that.

[*Coming before the Conduit.*

The conduit painted—the nine worthies—ay!  
But then what's here? King Harry with a scroll.  
Ha—Verbum Dei—verbum—word of God!  
God's passion! do you know the knave that painted it?

ATTENDANT. I do, my Lord.

GARDINER. Tell him to paint it out,  
And put some fresh device in lieu of it—  
A pair of gloves, a pair of gloves, sir; ha?  
There is no heresy there.

ATTENDANT. I will, my Lord;  
The man shall paint a pair of gloves. I am sure  
(Knowing the man) he wrought it ignorantly,  
And not from any malice.

GARDINER. Word of God  
In English! over this the brainless loons

That cannot spell *Esaïas* from *St. Paul*,  
Make themselves drunk and mad, fly out and flare  
Into rebellions. I'll have their bibles burnt.  
The bible is the priest's. Ay! fellow, what!  
Stand staring at me! shout, you gaping rogue!

MAN. I have, my Lord, shouted till I am hoarse.

GARDINER. What hast thou shouted, knave?

MAN. Long live Queen Mary!

GARDINER. Knave, there be two. There be both  
King and Queen,

Philip and Mary. Shout!

MAN. Nay, but, my Lord,  
The Queen comes first, Mary and Philip.

GARDINER. Shout, then,  
Mary and Philip!

MAN. Mary and Philip!

GARDINER. Now,  
Thou hast shouted for thy pleasure, shout for mine!  
Philip and Mary!

MAN. Must it be so, my Lord?

GARDINER. Ay, knave.

MAN. Philip and Mary!

GARDINER. I distrust thee.  
Thine is a half voice and a lean assent.  
What is thy name?

MAN. Sanders.

GARDINER. What else?

MAN. Zerubbabel.

GARDINER. Where dost thou live?

MAN. In Cornhill.

GARDINER. Where, knave, where?

MAN. Sign of the Talbot.

GARDINER. Come to me to-morrow.—

Rascal!—this land is like a hill of fire,

One crater opens when another shuts.

But so I get the laws against the heretic,

Spite of Lord Paget and Lord William Howard,

And others of our Parliament, revived,

I will show fire on my side—stake and fire—

Sharp work and short. The knaves are easily cow'd.

Follow their Majesties. [*Exit. The crowd following.*]

BAGENHALL. As proud as Becket.

STAFFORD. You would not have him murder'd as  
Becket was?

BAGENHALL. No—murder fathers murder: but I  
say

There is no man—there was one woman with us—

It was a sin to love her married, dead

I cannot choose but love her.

STAFFORD. Lady Jane?

CROWD (*going off*). God save their Graces!

STAFFORD. Did you see her die?

BAGENHALL. No, no; her innocent blood had  
blinded me.

You call me too black-blooded—true enough  
Her dark dead blood is in my heart with mine.  
If ever I cry out against the Pope  
Her dark dead blood that ever moves with mine  
Will stir the living tongue and make the cry.

STAFFORD. Yet doubtless you can tell me how  
she died?

BAGENHALL. Seventeen—and knew eight lan-  
guages—in music  
Peerless—her needle perfect, and her learning  
Beyond the churchmen ; yet so meek, so modest,  
So wife-like humble to the trivial boy  
Mismatch'd with her for policy ! I have heard  
She would not take a last farewell of him,  
She fear'd it might unman him for his end.  
She could not be unmann'd—no, nor outwoman'd—  
Seventeen—a rose of grace !  
Girl never breathed to rival such a rose ;  
Rose never blew that equall'd such a bud.

STAFFORD. Pray you go on.

BAGENHALL. She came upon the scaffold,  
And said she was condemn'd to die for treason ;  
She had but follow'd the device of those  
Her nearest kin : she thought they knew the laws.  
But for herself, she knew but little law,  
And nothing of the titles to the crown ;  
She had no desire for that, and wrung her hands,

And trusted God would save her thro' the blood  
Of Jesus Christ alone.

STAFFORD. Pray you go on.

BAGENHALL. Then knelt and said the Misere  
Mei—

But all in English, mark you ; rose again,  
And, when the headsman pray'd to be forgiven,  
Said, 'You will give me my true crown at last,  
But do it quickly ;' then all wept but she,  
Who changed not colour when she saw the block,  
But ask'd him, childlike : 'Will you take it off  
Before I lay me down ?' 'No, madam,' he said,  
Gasping ; and when her innocent eyes were bound,  
She, with her poor blind hands feeling—'where is it ?  
Where is it ?'—You must fancy that which follow'd,  
If you have heart to do it !

CROWD (*in the distance*). God save their Graces !

STAFFORD. Their Graces, our disgraces ! God  
confound them !

Why, she's grown bloodier ! when I last was here,  
This was against her conscience—would be murder !

BAGENHALL. The 'Thou shalt do no murder,'  
which God's hand

Wrote on her conscience, Mary rubb'd out pale—  
She could not make it white—and over that,  
Traced in the blackest text of Hell—'Thou shalt !'  
And sign'd it—Mary !

STAFFORD. Philip and the Pope  
Must have sign'd too. I hear this Legate's coming  
To bring us absolution from the Pope.  
The Lords and Commons will bow down before him—  
You are of the house? what will you do, Sir Ralph?

BAGENHALL. And why should I be bolder than  
the rest,  
Or honester than all?

STAFFORD. But, sir, if I—  
And oversea they say this state of yours  
Hath no more mortice than a tower of cards;  
And that a puff would do it—then if I  
And others made that move I touch'd upon,  
Back'd by the power of France, and landing here,  
Came with a sudden splendour, shout, and show,  
And dazzled men and deafen'd by some bright  
Loud venture, and the people so unquiet—  
And I the race of murder'd Buckingham—  
Not for myself, but for the kingdom—Sir,  
I trust that you would fight along with us.

BAGENHALL. No; you would fling your lives into  
the gulf.

STAFFORD. But if this Philip, as he's like to do,  
Left Mary a wife-widow here alone,  
Set up a viceroy, sent his myriads hither  
To seize upon the forts and fleet, and make us  
A Spanish province; would you not fight then?

BAGENHALL. I think I should fight then.

STAFFORD. I am sure of it.

Hist ! there's the face coming on here of one  
Who knows me. I must leave you. Fare you well,  
You'll hear of me again.

BAGENHALL. Upon the scaffold. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—ROOM IN WHITEHALL PALACE.

MARY. *Enter* PHILIP *and* CARDINAL POLE.

POLE. Ave Maria, gratia plena, Benedicta tu in  
mulieribus.

MARY. Loyal and royal cousin, humblest thanks.  
Had you a pleasant voyage up the river ?

POLE. We had your royal barge, and that same chair,  
Or rather throne of purple, on the deck.  
Our silver cross sparkled before the prow,  
The ripples twinkled at their diamond-dance,  
The boats that follow'd, were as glowing-gay  
As regal gardens ; and your flocks of swans,  
As fair and white as angels ; and your shores  
Wore in mine eyes the green of Paradise.  
My foreign friends, who dream'd us blanketed  
In ever-closing fog, were much amazed  
To find as fair a sun as might have flash'd  
Upon their lake of Garda, fire the Thames ;

Our voyage by sea was all but miracle ;  
And here the river flowing from the sea,  
Not toward it (for they thought not of our tides),  
Seem'd as a happy miracle to make glide—  
In quiet—home your banish'd countryman.

MARY. We heard that you were sick in Flanders,  
cousin.

POLE. A dizziness.

MARY. And how came you round again ?

POLE. The scarlet thread of Rahab saved her life ;  
And mine, a little letting of the blood.

MARY. Well ? now ?

POLE. Ay, cousin, as the heathen giant  
Had but to touch the ground, his force return'd—  
Thus, after twenty years of banishment,  
Feeling my native land beneath my foot,  
I said thereto : ' Ah, native land of mine,  
Thou art much beholden to this foot of mine,  
That hastes with full commission from the Pope  
To absolve thee from thy guilt of heresy.  
Thou hast disgraced me and attainted me,  
And mark'd me ev'n as Cain, and I return  
As Peter, but to bless thee : make me well.'  
Methinks the good land heard me, for to-day  
My heart beats twenty, when I see you, cousin.  
Ah, gentle cousin, since your Herod's death,  
How oft hath Peter knock'd at Mary's gate !



And Mary would have risen and let him in,  
But, Mary, there were those within the house  
Who would not have it.

MARY. True, good cousin Pole ;  
And there were also those without the house  
Who would not have it.

POLE. I believe so, cousin.  
State-policy and church-policy are conjoint,  
But Janus-faces looking diverse ways.  
I fear the Emperor much misvalued me.  
But all is well ; 'twas ev'n the will of God,  
Who, waiting till the time had ripen'd, now,  
Makes me his mouth of holy greeting. ' Hail,  
Daughter of God, and saver of the faith.  
Sit benedictus fructus ventris tui !'

MARY. Ah, heaven !

POLE. Unwell, your Grace ?

MARY. No, cousin, happy—  
Happy to see you ; never yet so happy  
Since I was crown'd.

POLE. Sweet cousin, you forget  
That long low minster where you gave your hand  
To this great Catholic King.

PHILIP. Well said, Lord Legate.

MARY. Nay, not well said ; I thought of you, my  
liege,  
Ev'n as I spoke.

PHILIP.                      Ay, Madam ; my Lord Paget  
Waits to present our Council to the Legate.  
Sit down here, all ; Madam, between us you.

POLE.    Lo, now you are enclosed with boards of  
cedar,  
Our little sister of the Song of Songs !  
You are doubly fenced and shielded sitting here  
Between the two most high-set thrones on earth,  
The Emperor's highness happily symbol'd by  
The King your husband, the Pope's Holiness  
By mine own self.

MARY.                      True, cousin, I am happy.  
When will you that we summon both our houses  
To take this absolution from your lips,  
And be regather'd to the Papal fold ?

POLE.    In Britain's calendar the brightest day  
Beheld our rough forefathers break their Gods,  
And clasp the faith in Christ ; but after that  
Might not St. Andrew's be her happiest day ?

MARY.    Then these shall meet upon St. Andrew's  
day.

*Enter PAGET, who presents the Council. Dumb show.*

POLE.    I am an old man wearied with my journey,  
Ev'n with my joy.    Permit me to withdraw.  
To Lambeth ?

PHILIP.        Ay, Lambeth has ousted Cranmer.  
It was not meet the heretic swine should live  
In Lambeth.

MARY.        There or anywhere, or at all.

PHILIP.       We have had it swept and garnish'd after  
                him.

POLE.        Not for the seven devils to enter in ?

PHILIP.       No, for we trust they parted in the swine.

POLE.        True, and I am the Angel of the Pope.  
Farewell, your Graces.

PHILIP.        Nay, not here—to me ;  
I will go with you to the waterside.

POLE.        Not be my Charon to the counter side ?

PHILIP.       No, my Lord Legate, the Lord Chancellor  
                goes.

POLE.        And unto no dead world ; but Lambeth  
                palace,  
Henceforth a centre of the living faith.

[*Exeunt* PHILIP, POLE, PAGET, *etc.*

*Manet* MARY.

MARY.       He hath awaked ! he hath awaked !  
He stirs within the darkness !  
Oh, Philip, husband ! now thy love to mine  
Will cling more close, and those bleak manners thaw,  
That make me shamed and tongue-tied in my love.

The second Prince of Peace—

The great unborn defender of the Faith,

Who will avenge me of mine enemies—

He comes, and my star rises.

The stormy Wyatts and Northumberlands,

The proud ambitions of Elizabeth,

And all her fieriest partisans—are pale

Before my star !

The light of this new learning wanes and dies :

The ghosts of Luther and Zuinglius fade

Into the deathless hell which is their doom

Before my star !

His sceptre shall go forth from Ind to Ind !

His sword shall hew the heretic peoples down !

His faith shall clothe the world that will be his,

Like universal air and sunshine ! Open,

Ye everlasting gates ! The King is here !—

My star, my son !

*Enter PHILIP, DUKE OF ALVA, etc.*

Oh, Philip, come with me ;

Good news have I to tell you, news to make

Both of us happy—ay, the Kingdom too.

Nay come with me—one moment !

PHILIP (*to ALVA*).

More than that :

There was one here of late—William the Silent

They call him—he is free enough in talk,  
But tells me nothing. You will be, we trust,  
Sometime the viceroy of those provinces—  
He must deserve his surname better.

ALVA.

Ay, sir ;

Inherit the Great Silence.

PHILIP.

True ; the provinces

Are hard to rule and must be hardly ruled ;  
Most fruitful, yet, indeed, an empty rind,  
All hollow'd out with stinging heresies ;  
And for their heresies, Alva, they will fight ;  
You must break them or they break you.

ALVA (*proudly*).

The first.

PHILIP. Good !

Well, Madam, this new happiness of mine ? [*Exeunt.*

*Enter* THREE PAGES.

FIRST PAGE. News, mates ! a miracle, a miracle !  
news !

The bells must ring ; Te Deums must be sung ;  
The Queen hath felt the motion of her babe !

SECOND PAGE. Ay ; but see here !

FIRST PAGE.

See what ?

SECOND PAGE.

This paper, Dickon.

I found it fluttering at the palace gates :—

‘The Queen of England is delivered of a dead dog !’

THIRD PAGE. These are the things that madden her. Fie upon it !

FIRST PAGE. Ay ; but I hear she hath a dropsy, lad,

Or a high-dropsy, as the doctors call it.

THIRD PAGE. Fie on her dropsy, so she have a dropsy !

I know that she was ever sweet to me.

FIRST PAGE. For thou and thine are Roman to the core.

THIRD PAGE. So thou and thine must be. Take heed !

FIRST PAGE. Not I,

And whether this flash of news be false or true,

So the wine run, and there be revelry,

Content am I. Let all the steeples clash,

Till the sun dance, as upon Easter Day. [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.—GREAT HALL IN WHITEHALL.

*At the far end a daïs. On this three chairs, two under one canopy for MARY and PHILIP, another on the right of these for POLE. Under the daïs on POLE's side, ranged along the wall, sit all the Spiritual Peers, and along the wall opposite, all the Temporal. The Commons on cross benches in front, a line of*

*approach to the dais between them. In the foreground, SIR RALPH BAGENHALL and other Members of the Commons.*

FIRST MEMBER. St. Andrew's day ; sit close, sit close, we are friends.

Is reconciled the word ? the Pope again ?

It must be thus ; and yet, cocksbody ! how strange

That Gardiner, once so one with all of us

Against this foreign marriage, should have yielded

So utterly !—strange ! but stranger still that he,

So fierce against the Headship of the Pope,

Should play the second actor in this pageant

That brings him in ; such aameleon he !

SECOND MEMBER. This Gardiner turn'd his coat  
in Henry's time ;

The serpent that hath slough'd will slough again.

THIRD MEMBER. Tut, then we all are serpents.

SECOND MEMBER. Speak for yourself.

THIRD MEMBER. Ay, and for Gardiner ! being  
English citizen,

How should he bear a bridegroom out of Spain ?

The Queen would have him ! being English churchman

How should he bear the headship of the Pope ?

The Queen would have it ! Statesmen that are wise

Shape a necessity, as a sculptor clay,

To their own model.

SECOND MEMBER. Statesmen that are wise  
Take truth herself for model. What say you?

[To SIR RALPH BAGENHALL.

BAGENHALL. We talk and talk.

FIRST MEMBER. Ay, and what use to talk?  
Philip's no sudden alien—the Queen's husband,  
He's here, and king, or will be—yet cocksbody!  
So hated here! I watch'd a hive of late;  
My seven-years' friend was with me, my young boy;  
Out crept a wasp, with half the swarm behind.  
'Philip!' says he. I had to cuff the rogue  
For infant treason.

THIRD MEMBER. But they say that bees,  
If any creeping life invade their hive  
Too gross to be thrust out, will build him round,  
And bind him in from harming of their combs.  
And Philip by these articles is bound  
From stirring hand or foot to wrong the realm.

SECOND MEMBER. By bonds of beeswax, like your  
creeping thing;  
But your wise bees had stung him first to death.

THIRD MEMBER. Hush, hush!  
You wrong the Chancellor: the clauses added  
To that same treaty which the emperor sent us  
Were mainly Gardiner's: that no foreigner  
Hold office in the household, fleet, forts, army;  
That if the Queen should die without a child,



The bond between the kingdoms be dissolved ;  
That Philip should not mix us any way  
With his French wars—

SECOND MEMBER.           Ay, ay, but what security,  
Good sir, for this, if Philip——

THIRD MEMBER.           Peace—the Queen, Philip,  
and Pole.                           [*All rise, and stand.*]

*Enter MARY, PHILIP, and POLE.*

[GARDINER conducts them to the three chairs of  
state. PHILIP sits on the QUEEN'S left, POLE  
on her right.]

GARDINER. Our short-lived sun, before his winter  
plunge,  
Laughs at the last red leaf, and Andrew's Day.

MARY. Should not this day be held in after  
years  
More solemn than of old ?

PHILIP.                       Madam, my wish  
Echoes your Majesty's.

POLE.                         It shall be so.

GARDINER. Mine echoes both your Graces' ;  
(*aside*) but the Pope—  
Can we not have the Catholic church as well  
Without as with the Italian ? if we cannot,  
Why then the Pope.

My lords of the upper house,  
And ye, my masters, of the lower house,  
Do ye stand fast by that which ye resolved?

VOICES. We do.

GARDINER. And be you all one mind to supplicate  
The Legate here for pardon, and acknowledge  
The primacy of the Pope?

VOICES. We are all one mind.

GARDINER. Then must I play the vassal to this  
Pole. [*Aside.*

*[He draws a paper from under his robes and presents it to the KING and QUEEN, who look through it and return it to him; then ascends a tribune, and reads.]*

We, the Lords Spiritual and Temporal,  
And Commons here in Parliament assembled,  
Presenting the whole body of this realm  
Of England, and dominions of the same,  
Do make most humble suit unto your Majesties,  
In our own name and that of all the state,  
That by your gracious means and intercession  
Our supplication be exhibited  
To the Lord Cardinal Pole, sent here as Legate  
From our most Holy Father Julius, Pope,  
And from the Apostolic see of Rome;  
And do declare our penitence and grief

For our long schism and disobedience,  
Either in making laws and ordinances  
Against the Holy Father's primacy,  
Or else by doing or by speaking aught  
Which might impugn or prejudice the same ;  
By this our supplication promising,  
As well for our own selves as all the realm,  
That now we be and ever shall be quick,  
Under and with your Majesties' authorities,  
To do to the utmost all that in us lies  
Towards the abrogation and repeal  
Of all such laws and ordinances made ;  
Whereon we humbly pray your Majesties,  
As persons undefiled with our offence,  
So to set forth this humble suit of ours  
That we the rather by your intercession  
May from the Apostolic see obtain,  
Thro' this most reverend Father, absolution,  
And full release from danger of all censures  
Of Holy Church that we be fall'n into,  
So that we may, as children penitent,  
Be once again received into the bosom  
And unity of Universal Church ;  
And that this noble realm thro' after years  
May in this unity and obedience  
Unto the holy see and reigning Pope  
Serve God and both your Majesties.

VOICES.

Amen. [*All sit.*

[*He again presents the petition to the KING and  
QUEEN, who hand it reverentially to POLE.*

POLE (*sitting*). This is the loveliest day that ever  
smiled

On England. All her breath should, incenselike,  
Rise to the heavens in grateful praise of Him  
Who now recalls her to His ancient fold.  
Lo! once again God to this realm hath given  
A token of His more especial Grace;  
For as this people were the first of all  
The islands call'd into the dawning church  
Out of the dead, deep night of heathendom,  
So now are these the first whom God hath given  
Grace to repent and sorrow for their schism;  
And if your penitence be not mockery,  
Oh how the blessed angels who rejoice  
Over one saved do triumph at this hour  
In the reborn salvation of a land  
So noble.

[*A pause.*

For ourselves we do protest  
That our commission is to heal, not harm;  
We come not to condemn, but reconcile;  
We come not to compel, but call again;  
We come not to destroy, but edify;  
Nor yet to question things already done;  
These are forgiven—matters of the past—

And range with jetsam and with offal thrown  
Into the blind sea of forgetfulness. [A pause.  
Ye have reversed the attainder laid on us  
By him who sack'd the house of God ; and we,  
Amplier than any field on our poor earth  
Can render thanks in fruit for being sown,  
Do here and now repay you sixty-fold,  
A hundred, yea, a thousand thousand-fold,  
With heaven for earth.

[*Rising and stretching forth his hands. All kneel  
but SIR RALPH BAGENHALL, who rises and  
remains standing.*

The Lord who hath redeem'd us  
With His own blood, and wash'd us from our sins,  
To purchase for Himself a stainless bride ;  
He, whom the Father hath appointed Head  
Of all his church, He by His mercy absolve you !  
[A pause.

And we by that authority Apostolic  
Given unto us, his Legate, by the Pope,  
Our Lord and Holy Father, Julius,  
God's Vicar and Vicegerent upon earth,  
Do here absolve you and deliver you  
And every one of you, and all the realm  
And its dominions from all heresy,  
All schism, and from all and every censure,  
Judgment, and pain accruing thereupon ;

And also we restore you to the bosom  
And unity of Universal Church.

[Turning to GARDINER.

Our letters of commission will declare this plainlier.

[QUEEN *heard sobbing.* Cries of Amen ! Amen !

*Some of the Members embrace one another.*

*All but SIR RALPH BAGENHALL pass out into  
the neighbouring chapel, whence is heard the  
Te Deum.*

BAGENHALL. We strove against the papacy from  
the first,

In William's time, in our first Edward's time,  
And in my master Henry's time ; but now,  
The unity of Universal Church,  
Mary would have it ; and this Gardiner follows ;  
The unity of Universal Hell,  
Philip would have it ; and this Gardiner follows !  
A Parliament of imitative apes !  
Sheep at the gap which Gardiner takes, who not  
Believes the Pope, nor any of them believe—  
These spaniel-Spaniard English of the time,  
Who rub their fawning noses in the dust,  
For that is Philip's gold-dust, and adore  
This Vicar of their Vicar. Would I had been  
Born Spaniard ! I had held my head up then.  
I am ashamed that I am Bagenhall,  
English.

*Enter* OFFICER.

OFFICER. Sir Ralph Bagenhall !

BAGENHALL. What of that ?

OFFICER. You were the one sole man in either  
house

Who stood upright when both the houses fell.

BAGENHALL. The houses fell !

OFFICER. I mean the houses knelt  
Before the Legate.

BAGENHALL. Do not scrimp your phrase,  
But stretch it wider ; say when England fell.

OFFICER. I say you were the one sole man who  
stood.

BAGENHALL. I am the one sole man in either  
house,  
Perchance in England, loves her like a son.

OFFICER. Well, you one man, because you stood  
upright,  
Her Grace the Queen commands you to the Tower.

BAGENHALL. As traitor, or as heretic, or for what ?

OFFICER. If any man in any way would be  
The one man, he shall be so to his cost.

BAGENHALL. What ! will she have my head ?

OFFICER. A round fine likelier.  
Your pardon. [*Calling to* ATTENDANT.

By the river to the Tower. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—WHITEHALL. A ROOM IN THE  
PALACE.

MARY, GARDINER, POLE, PAGET, BONNER, *etc.*

MARY. The King and I, my Lords, now that all  
traitors

Against our royal state have lost the heads  
Wherewith they plotted in their treasonous malice,  
Have talk'd together, and are well agreed  
That those old statutes touching Lollardism  
To bring the heretic to the stake, should be  
No longer a dead letter, but requicken'd.

ONE OF THE COUNCIL. Why, what hath fluster'd  
Gardiner? how he rubs

His forelock!

PAGET. I have changed a word with him  
In coming, and may change a word again.

GARDINER. Madam, your Highness is our sun,  
the King

And you together our two suns in one;  
And so the beams of both may shine upon us,  
The faith that seem'd to droop will feel your light,  
Lift head, and flourish; yet not light alone,  
There must be heat—there must be heat enough  
To scorch and wither heresy to the root.  
For what saith Christ? 'Compel them to come in.'



And what saith Paul? 'I would they were cut off  
That trouble you.' Let the dead letter live!  
Trace it in fire, that all the louts to whom  
Their A B C is darkness, clowns and grooms  
May read it! so you quash rebellion too,  
For heretic and traitor are all one:  
Two vipers of one breed—an amphisbæna,  
Each end a sting: Let the dead letter burn!

PAGET. Yet there be some disloyal Catholics,  
And many heretics loyal; heretic throats  
Cried no God-bless-her to the Lady Jane,  
But shouted in Queen Mary. So there be  
Some traitor-heretic, there is axe and cord.  
To take the lives of others that are loyal,  
And by the churchman's pitiless doom of fire,  
Were but a thankless policy in the crown,  
Ay, and against itself; for there are many.

MARY. If we could burn out heresy, my Lord  
Paget,  
We reck not tho' we lost this crown of England—  
Ay! tho' it were ten Englands!

GARDINER. Right, your Grace.  
Paget, you are all for this poor life of ours,  
And care but little for the life to be.

PAGET. I have some time, for curiousness, my  
Lord  
Watch'd children playing at *their* life to be,

And cruel at it, killing helpless flies ;  
Such is our time—all times for aught I know.

GARDINER. We kill the heretics that sting the  
soul—

They, with right reason, flies that prick the flesh.

PAGET. They had not reach'd right reason ; little  
children !

They kill'd but for their pleasure and the power  
They felt in killing.

GARDINER. A spice of Satan, ha !

Why, good ! what then ? granted !—we are fallen  
creatures ;

Look to your Bible, Paget ! we are fallen.

PAGET. I am but of the laity, my Lord Bishop,  
And may not read your Bible, yet I found  
One day, a wholesome scripture, ' Little children,  
Love one another.'

GARDINER. Did you find a scripture,  
' I come not to bring peace but a sword ' ? The sword  
Is in her Grace's hand to smite with. Paget,  
You stand up here to fight for heresy,  
You are more than guess'd at as a heretic,  
And on the steep-up track of the true faith  
Your lapses are far seen.

PAGET. The faultless Gardiner !

MARY. You brawl beyond the question ; speak  
Lord Legate !

POLE. Indeed, I cannot follow with your Grace :  
Rather would say—the shepherd doth not kill  
The sheep that wander from his flock, but sends  
His careful dog to bring them to the fold.  
Look to the Netherlands, wherein have been  
Such holocausts of heresy ! to what end ?  
For yet the faith is not established there.

GARDINER. The end's not come.

POLE. No—nor this way will come,  
Seeing there lie two ways to every end,  
A better and a worse—the worse is here  
To persecute, because to persecute  
Makes a faith hated, and is furthermore  
No perfect witness of a perfect faith  
In him who persecutes : when men are tost  
On tides of strange opinion, and not sure  
Of their own selves, they are wroth with their own  
selves,  
And thence with others ; then, who lights the faggot ?  
Not the full faith, no, but the lurking doubt.  
Old Rome, that first made martyrs in the Church,  
Trembled for her own gods, for these were trembling—  
But when did our Rome tremble ?

PAGET. Did she not  
In Henry's time and Edward's ?

POLE. What, my Lord !  
The Church on Peter's rock ? never ! I have seen

A pine in Italy that cast its shadow  
Athwart a cataract ; firm stood the pine—  
The cataract shook the shadow. To my mind,  
The cataract typed the headlong plunge and fall  
Of heresy to the pit : the pine was Rome.  
You see, my Lords,  
It was the shadow of the Church that trembled ;  
Your church was but the shadow of a church,  
Wanting the Papal mitre.

GARDINER (*muttering*). Here be tropes.

POLE. And tropes are good to clothe a naked  
truth,

And make it look more seemly.

GARDINER. Tropes again !

POLE. You are hard to please. Then without  
tropes, my Lord,

An overmuch severeness, I repeat,  
When faith is wavering makes the waverer pass  
Into more settled hatred of the doctrines  
Of those who rule, which hatred by and by  
Involves the ruler (thus there springs to light  
That Centaur of a monstrous Commonweal,  
The traitor-heretic) then tho' some may quail,  
Yet others are that dare the stake and fire,  
And their strong torment bravely borne, begets  
An admiration and an indignation,  
And hot desire to imitate ; so the plague

Of schism spreads ; were there but three or four  
Of these misleaders, yet I would not say  
Burn ! and we cannot burn whole towns ; they are  
many,  
As my Lord Paget says.

GARDINER. Yet my Lord Cardinal—

POLE. I am your Legate ; please you let me finish.  
Methinks that under our Queen's regimen  
We might go softlier than with crimson rowel  
And streaming lash. When Herod-Henry first  
Began to batter at your English Church,  
This was the cause, and hence the judgment on her.  
She seethed with such adulteries, and the lives  
Of many among your churchmen were so foul  
That heaven wept and earth blush'd. I would advise  
That we should thoroughly cleanse the Church within  
Before these bitter statutes be requicken'd.  
So after that when she once more is seen  
White as the light, the spotless bride of Christ,  
Like Christ himself on Tabor, possibly  
The Lutheran may be won to her again ;  
Till when, my Lords, I counsel tolerance.

GARDINER. What, if a mad dog bit your hand, my  
Lord,  
Would you not chop the bitten finger off,  
Lest your whole body should madden with the poison?  
I would not, were I Queen, tolerate the heretic,

No, not an hour. The ruler of a land  
Is bounden by his power and place to see  
His people be not poison'd. Tolerate them !  
Why? do they tolerate you? Nay, many of them  
Would burn—have burnt each other ; call they not  
The one true faith, a loathsome idol-worship?  
Beware, Lord Legate, of a heavier crime  
Than heresy is itself ; beware, I say,  
Lest men accuse you of indifference  
To all faiths, all religion ; for you know  
Right well that you yourself have been supposed  
Tainted with Lutheranism in Italy.

POLE (*angered*). But you, my Lord, beyond all  
supposition,

In clear and open day were congruent  
With that vile Cranmer in the accursed lie  
Of good Queen Catherine's divorce—the spring  
Of all those evils that have flow'd upon us ;  
For you yourself have truckled to the tyrant,  
And done your best to bastardise our Queen,  
For which God's righteous judgment fell upon you  
In your five years of imprisonment, my Lord,  
Under young Edward. Who so bolster'd up  
The gross King's headship of the Church, or more  
Denied the Holy Father !

GARDINER.

Ha ! what ! eh ?

But you, my Lord, a polish'd gentleman,

A bookman, flying from the heat and tussle,  
You lived among your vines and oranges,  
In your soft Italy yonder ! You were sent for,  
You were appeal'd to, but you still preferr'd  
Your learned leisure. As for what I did  
I suffer'd and repented. You, Lord Legate  
And Cardinal-Deacon, have not now to learn  
That ev'n St. Peter in his time of fear  
Denied his Master, ay, and thrice, my Lord.

POLE. But not for five-and-twenty years, my Lord.

GARDINER. Ha ! good ! it seems then I was sum-  
mon'd hither

But to be mock'd and baited. Speak, friend Bonner,  
And tell this learned Legate he lacks zeal.  
The Church's evil is not as the King's,  
Cannot be heal'd by stroking. The mad bite  
Must have the cautery—tell him—and at once.  
What would'st thou do hadst thou his power, thou  
That layest so long in heretic bonds with me ;  
Would'st thou not burn and blast them root and  
branch ?

BONNER. Ay, after you, my Lord.

GARDINER. Nay, God's passion, before me ! speak !

BONNER. I am on fire until I see them flame.

GARDINER. Ay, the psalm - singing weavers,  
cobblers, scum—

But this most noble prince Plantagenet,

Our good Queen's cousin—dallying over seas  
Even when his brother's, nay, his noble mother's,  
Head fell—

POLE.           Peace, madman !

Thou stirrest up a grief thou canst not fathom.  
Thou Christian Bishop, thou Lord Chancellor  
Of England ! no more rein upon thine anger  
Than any child ! Thou mak'st me much ashamed  
That I was for a moment wroth at thee.

MARY. I come for counsel and ye give me feuds,  
Like dogs that set to watch their master's gate,  
Fall, when the thief is ev'n within the walls,  
To worrying one another. My Lord Chancellor,  
You have an old trick of offending us ;  
And but that you are art and part with us  
In purging heresy, well we might, for this  
Your violence and much roughness to the Legate,  
Have shut you from our counsels. Cousin Pole,  
You are fresh from brighter lands. Retire with me.  
His Highness and myself (so you allow us)  
Will let you learn in peace and privacy  
What power this cooler sun of England hath  
In breeding godless vermin. And pray Heaven  
That you may see according to our sight.  
Come, cousin.           [*Exeunt* QUEEN and POLE, *etc.*]

GARDINER. Pole has the Plantagenet face,  
But not the force made them our mightiest kings.



Fine eyes—but melancholy, irresolute—  
A fine beard, Bonner, a very full fine beard.  
But a weak mouth, an indeterminate—ha ?

BONNER. Well, a weak mouth, perchance.

GARDINER. And not like thine

To gorge a heretic whole, roasted or raw.

BONNER. I'd do my best, my Lord ; but yet the  
Legate

Is here as Pope and Master of the Church,  
And if he go not with you—

GARDINER. Tut, Master Bishop,

Our bashful Legate, saw'st not how he flush'd ?

Touch him upon his old heretical talk,

He'll burn a diocese to prove his orthodoxy.

And let him call me truckler. In those times,

Thou knowest we had to dodge, or duck, or die ;

I kept my head for use of Holy Church ;

And see you, we shall have to dodge again,

And let the Pope trample our rights, and plunge

His foreign fist into our island Church

To plump the leaner pouch of Italy.

For a time, for a time.

Why ? that these statutes may be put in force,

And that his fan may thoroughly purge his floor.

BONNER. So then you hold the Pope—

GARDINER. I hold the Pope !

What do I hold him ? what do I hold the Pope ?

Come, come, the morsel stuck—this Cardinal's fault—  
I have gulpt it down. I am wholly for the Pope,  
Utterly and altogether for the Pope,  
The Eternal Peter of the changeless chair,  
Crown'd slave of slaves, and mitred king of kings,  
God upon earth ! what more ? what would you  
have ?  
Hence, let's be gone.

*Enter USHER.*

USHER. Well that you be not gone,  
My Lord. The Queen, most wroth at first with you,  
Is now content to grant you full forgiveness,  
So that you crave full pardon of the Legate.  
I am sent to fetch you.

GARDINER. Doth Pole yield, sir, ha !  
Did you hear 'em ? were you by ?

USHER. I cannot tell you,  
His bearing is so courtly-delicate ;  
And yet methinks he falters : their two Graces  
Do so dear-cousin and royal-cousin him,  
So press on him the duty which as Legate  
He owes himself, and with such royal smiles—

GARDINER. Smiles that burn men. Bonner, it  
will be carried.  
He falters, ha ? 'fore God, we change and change ;

Men now are bow'd and old, the doctors tell you,  
At three-score years ; then if we change at all  
We needs must do it quickly ; it is an age  
Of brief life, and brief purpose, and brief patience,  
As I have shown to-day. I am sorry for it  
If Pole be like to turn. Our old friend Cranmer,  
Your more especial love, hath turn'd so often,  
He knows not where he stands, which, if this pass,  
We two shall have to teach him ; let 'em look to it,  
Cranmer and Hooper, Ridley and Latimer,  
Rogers and Ferrar, for their time is come,  
Their hour is hard at hand, their 'dies Iræ,'  
Their 'dies Illa,' which will test their sect.  
I feel it but a duty—you will find in it  
Pleasure as well as duty, worthy Bonner,—  
To test their sect. Sir, I attend the Queen  
To crave most humble pardon—of her most  
Royal, Infallible, Papal Legate-cousin. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V.—WOODSTOCK.

ELIZABETH, LADY IN WAITING.

ELIZABETH. So they have sent poor Courtenay  
over sea.

LADY. And banish'd us to Woodstock, and the  
fields.

The colours of our Queen are green and white,  
These fields are only green, they make me gape.

ELIZABETH. There's whitethorn, girl.

LADY. Ay, for an hour in May.  
But court is always May, buds out in masques,  
Breaks into feather'd merriments, and flowers  
In silken pageants. Why do they keep us here?  
Why still suspect your Grace?

ELIZABETH. Hard upon both.

[ *Writes on the window with a diamond.*

Much suspected, of me  
Nothing proven can be.  
Quoth Elizabeth, prisoner.

LADY. What hath your Highness written?

ELIZABETH. A true rhyme.

LADY. Cut with a diamond; so to last like truth.

ELIZABETH. Ay, if truth last.

LADY. But truth, they say, will out,  
So it must last. It is not like a word,  
That comes and goes in uttering.

ELIZABETH. Truth, a word!

The very Truth and very Word are one.  
But truth of story, which I glanced at, girl,  
Is like a word that comes from olden days,  
And passes thro' the peoples: every tongue  
Alters it passing, till it spells and speaks  
Quite other than at first.

LADY. I do not follow.

ELIZABETH. How many names in the long sweep  
of time

That so foreshortens greatness, may but hang  
On the chance mention of some fool that once  
Brake bread with us, perhaps: and my poor chro-  
nicle

Is but of glass. Sir Henry Bedingfield  
May split it for a spite.

LADY. God grant it last,  
And witness to your Grace's innocence,  
Till doomsday melt it.

ELIZABETH. Or a second fire,  
Like that which lately crackled underfoot  
And in this very chamber, fuse the glass,  
And char us back again into the dust  
We spring from. Never peacock against rain  
Scream'd as you did for water.

LADY. And I got it.  
I woke Sir Henry—and he's true to you—  
I read his honest horror in his eyes.

ELIZABETH. Or true to you?

LADY. Sir Henry Bedingfield!  
I will have no man true to me, your Grace,  
But one that pares his nails; to me? the clown!

ELIZABETH. Out, girl! you wrong a noble gentle-  
man.

LADY. For, like his cloak, his manners want the  
nap  
And gloss of court ; but of this fire he says,  
Nay swears, it was no wicked wilfulness,  
Only a natural chance.

ELIZABETH. A chance—perchance  
One of those wicked wilfuls that men make,  
Nor shame to call it nature. Nay, I know  
They hunt my blood. Save for my daily range  
Among the pleasant fields of Holy Writ  
I might despair. But there hath some one come ;  
The house is all in movement. Hence, and see.  
[*Exit* LADY.]

MILKMAID (*singing without*).

Shame upon you, Robin,  
Shame upon you now !  
Kiss me would you ? with my hands  
Milking the cow ?  
Daisies grow again,  
Kingcups blow again,  
And you came and kiss'd me milking the cow.

Robin came behind me,  
Kiss'd me well I vow ;  
Cuff him could I ? with my hands  
Milking the cow ?  
Swallows fly again,  
Cuckoos cry again,  
And you came and kiss'd me milking the cow.

Come, Robin, Robin,  
Come and kiss me now ;  
Help it can I ? with my hands  
Milking the cow ?  
Ringdoves coo again,  
All things woo again.  
Come behind and kiss me milking the cow !

ELIZABETH. Right honest and red-cheek'd ; Robin  
was violent,  
And she was crafty—a sweet violence,  
And a sweet craft. I would I were a milkmaid,  
To sing, love, marry, churn, brew, bake, and die,  
Then have my simple headstone by the church,  
And all things lived and ended honestly.  
I could not if I would. I am Harry's daughter :  
Gardiner would have my head. They are not sweet,  
The violence and the craft that do divide  
The world of nature ; what is weak must lie ;  
The lion needs but roar to guard his young ;  
The lapwing lies, says ' here ' when they are there.  
Threaten the child ; ' I'll scourge you if you did it : '  
What weapon hath the child, save his soft tongue,  
To say ' I did not ? ' and my rod's the block.  
I never lay my head upon the pillow  
But that I think, ' Wilt thou lie there to-morrow ? '  
How oft the falling axe, that never fell,  
Hath shock'd me back into the daylight truth  
That it may fall to-day ! Those damp, black, dead





There haunt some Papist ruffians hereabout  
Would murder you.

ELIZABETH.                    I thank you heartily, sir,  
But I am royal, tho' your prisoner,  
And God hath blest or cursed me with a nose—  
Your boots are from the horses.

BEDINGFIELD.                    Ay, my Lady.  
When next there comes a missive from the Queen  
It shall be all my study for one hour  
To rose and lavender my horsiness,  
Before I dare to glance upon your Grace.

ELIZABETH.    A missive from the Queen : last time  
                         she wrote,  
I had like to have lost my life : it takes my breath :  
O God, sir, do you look upon your boots,  
Are you so small a man ?    Help me : what think you,  
Is it life or death ?

BEDINGFIELD.    I thought not on my boots ;  
The devil take all boots were ever made  
Since man went barefoot.    See, I lay it here,  
For I will come no nearer to your Grace ;

*[Laying down the letter.]*

And, whether it bring you bitter news or sweet,  
And God hath given your Grace a nose, or not,  
I'll help you, if I may.

ELIZABETH.                    Your pardon, then ;  
It is the heat and narrowness of the cage

That makes the captive testy ; with free wing  
The world were all one Araby. Leave me now,  
Will you, companion to myself, sir ?

BEDINGFIELD.

Will I ?

With most exceeding willingness, I will ;

You know I never come till I be call'd. [*Exit.*]

ELIZABETH. It lies there folded : is there venom  
in it ?

A snake—and if I touch it, it may sting.

Come, come, the worst !

Best wisdom is to know the worst at once. [*Reads :*

‘It is the King’s wish, that you should wed Prince  
Philibert of Savoy. You are to come to Court on the  
instant ; and think of this in your coming.

‘MARY THE QUEEN.’

Think ! I have many thoughts ;

I think there may be birdlime here for me ;

I think they fain would have me from the realm ;

I think the Queen may never bear a child ;

I think that I may be some time the Queen,

Then, Queen indeed : no foreign prince or priest

Should fill my throne, myself upon the steps.

I think I will not marry anyone,

Specially not this landless Philibert

Of Savoy ; but, if Philip menace me,

I think that I will play with Philibert,—

As once the Holy Father did with mine,  
Before my father married my good mother,—  
For fear of Spain.

*Enter* LADY.

LADY. O Lord ! your Grace, your Grace,  
I feel so happy : it seems that we shall fly  
These bald, blank fields, and dance into the sun  
That shines on princes.

ELIZABETH. Yet, a moment since,  
I wish'd myself the milkmaid singing here,  
To kiss and cuff among the birds and flowers—  
A right rough life and healthful.

LADY. But the wench  
Hath her own troubles ; she is weeping now ;  
For the wrong Robin took her at her word.  
Then the cow kick'd, and all her milk was spilt.  
Your Highness such a milkmaid ?

ELIZABETH. I had kept  
My Robins and my cows in sweeter order  
Had I been such.

LADY (*slyly*). And had your Grace a Robin ?

ELIZABETH. Come, come, you are chill here ;  
you want the sun  
That shines at court ; make ready for the journey.  
Pray God, we 'scape the sunstroke. Ready at once.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.—LONDON. A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

LORD PETRE *and* LORD WILLIAM HOWARD.

PETRE. You cannot see the Queen. Renard  
denied her,  
Ev'n now to me.

HOWARD. Their Flemish go-between  
And all-in-all. I came to thank her Majesty  
For freeing my friend Bagenhall from the Tower ;  
A grace to me ! Mercy, that herb-of-grace,  
Flowers now but seldom.

PETRE. Only now perhaps.  
Because the Queen hath been three days in tears  
For Philip's going—like the wild hedge-rose  
Of a soft winter, possible, not probable,  
However you have prov'n it.

HOWARD. I must see her.

*Enter* RENARD.

RENARD. My Lords, you cannot see her Majesty.

HOWARD. Why then the King ! for I would have  
him bring it  
Home to the leisure wisdom of his Queen,  
Before he go, that since these statutes past,  
Gardiner out-Gardiners Gardiner in his heat,

Bonner cannot out-Bonner his own self—  
Beast !—but they play with fire as children do,  
And burn the house. I know that these are breeding  
A fierce resolve and fixt heart-hate in men  
Against the King, the Queen, the Holy Father,  
The faith itself. Can I not see him ?

RENARD.

Not now.

And in all this, my Lord, her Majesty  
Is flint of flint, you may strike fire from her,  
Not hope to melt her. I will give your message.  
[*Exeunt* PETRE and HOWARD.]

*Enter* PHILIP (*musings*).

PHILIP. She will not have Prince Philibert of  
Savoy,  
I talk'd with her in vain—says she will live  
And die true maid—a goodly creature too.  
Would *she* had been the Queen ! yet she must have  
him ;  
She troubles England : that she breathes in England  
Is life and lungs to every rebel birth  
That passes out of embryo.

Simon Renard !—

This Howard, whom they fear, what was he saying ?

RENARD. What your imperial father said, my  
liege,

To deal with heresy gentlier. Gardiner burns,  
And Bonner burns ; and it would seem this people  
Care more for our brief life in their wet land,  
Than yours in happier Spain. I told my Lord  
He should not vex her Highness ; she would say  
These are the means God works with, that His church  
May flourish.

PHILIP.           Ay, sir, but in statesmanship  
To strike too soon is oft to miss the blow.  
Thou knowest I bad my chaplain, Castro, preach  
Against these burnings.

RENARD.                               And the Emperor  
Approved you, and when last he wrote, declared  
His comfort in your Grace that you were bland  
And affable to men of all estates,  
In hope to charm them from their hate of Spain.

PHILIP.   In hope to crush all heresy under Spain.  
But, Renard, I am sicker staying here  
Than any sea could make me passing hence,  
Tho' I be ever deadly sick at sea.  
So sick am I with biding for this child.  
Is it the fashion in this clime for women  
To go twelve months in bearing of a child ?  
The nurses yawn'd, the cradle gaped, they led  
Processions, chanted litanies, clash'd their bells,  
Shot off their lying cannon, and her priests  
Have preach'd, the fools, of this fair prince to come ;

Till, by St. James, I find myself the fool.

Why do you lift your eyebrow at me thus?

RENARD. I never saw your Highness moved till  
now.

PHILIP. So weary am I of this wet land of  
theirs,

And every soul of man that breathes therein.

RENARD. My liege, we must not drop the mask  
before

The masquerade is over—

PHILIP. —Have I dropt it?

I have but shown a loathing face to you,

Who knew it from the first.

*Enter MARY.*

MARY (*aside*). With Renard. Still  
Parleying with Renard, all the day with Renard,  
And scarce a greeting all the day for me—

And goes to-morrow. [*Exit MARY.*

PHILIP (*to RENARD, who advances to him*). Well,  
sir, is there more?

RENARD (*who has perceived the QUEEN*). May  
Simon Renard speak a single word?

PHILIP. Ay.

RENARD. And be forgiven for it?

PHILIP. Simon Renard

Knows me too well to speak a single word  
That could not be forgiven.

RENARD. Well, my liege,  
Your Grace hath a most chaste and loving wife.

PHILIP. Why not? The Queen of Philip should  
be chaste.

RENARD. Ay, but, my Lord, you know what Virgil  
sings,  
Woman is various and most mutable.

PHILIP. She play the harlot! never.

RENARD. No, sire, no,  
Not dream'd of by the rabidest gossamer.  
There was a paper thrown into the palace,  
'The King hath wearied of his barren bride.'  
She came upon it, read it, and then rent it,  
With all the rage of one who hates a truth  
He cannot but allow. Sire, I would have you—  
What should I say, I cannot pick my words—  
Be somewhat less—majestic to your Queen.

PHILIP. Am I to change my manners, Simon  
Renard,  
Because these islanders are brutal beasts?  
Or would you have me turn a sonneteer,  
And warble those brief-sighted eyes of hers?

RENARD. Brief-sighted tho' they be, I have seen  
them, sire,  
When you perchance were trifling royally



With some fair dame of court, suddenly fill  
With such fierce fire—had it been fire indeed  
It would have burnt both speakers.

PHILIP. Ay, and then?

RENARD. Sire, might it not be policy in some  
matter

Of small importance now and then to cede  
A point to her demand?

PHILIP. Well, I am going.

RENARD. For should her love when you are gone,  
my liege,

Witness these papers, there will not be wanting  
Those that will urge her injury—should her love—  
And I have known such women more than one—  
Veer to the counterpoint, and jealousy  
Hath in it an alchemic force to fuse  
Almost into one metal love and hate,—  
And she impress her wrongs upon her Council,  
And these again upon her Parliament—  
We are not loved here, and would be then perhaps  
Not so well holpen in our wars with France,  
As else we might be—here she comes.

*Enter MARY.*

MARY.

O Philip!

Nay, must you go indeed?

PHILIP.

Madam, I must.

MARY. The parting of a husband and a wife  
Is like the cleaving of a heart ; one half  
Will flutter here, one there.

PHILIP. You say true, Madam.

MARY. The Holy Virgin will not have me yet  
Lose the sweet hope that I may bear a prince.  
If such a prince were born and you not here !

PHILIP. I should be here if such a prince were born.

MARY. But must you go ?

PHILIP. Madam, you know my father,  
Retiring into cloistral solitude  
To yield the remnant of his years to heaven,  
Will shift the yoke and weight of all the world  
From off his neck to mine. We meet at Brussels.  
But since mine absence will not be for long,  
Your Majesty shall go to Dover with me,  
And wait my coming back.

MARY. To Dover ? no,  
I am too feeble. I will go to Greenwich,  
So you will have me with you ; and there watch  
All that is gracious in the breath of heaven  
Draw with your sails from our poor land, and pass  
And leave me, Philip, with my prayers for you.

PHILIP. And doubtless I shall profit by your  
prayers.

MARY. Methinks that would you tarry one day  
more

(The news was sudden) I could mould myself  
To bear your going better ; will you do it ?

PHILIP. Madam, a day may sink or save a realm.

MARY. A day may save a heart from breaking too.

PHILIP. Well, Simon Renard, shall we stop a day ?

RENARD. Your Grace's business will not suffer,  
sire,

For one day more, so far as I can tell.

PHILIP. Then one day more to please her Majesty.

MARY. The sunshine sweeps across my life again.  
O if I knew you felt this parting, Philip,  
As I do !

PHILIP. By St. James I do protest,  
Upon the faith and honour of a Spaniard,  
I am vastly grieved to leave your Majesty.  
Simon, is supper ready ?

RENARD. Ay, my liege,  
I saw the covers laying.

PHILIP. Let us have it. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

MARY, CARDINAL POLE.

MARY. What have you there?

POLE. So please your Majesty,  
A long petition from the foreign exiles  
To spare the life of Cranmer. Bishop Thirlby,  
And my Lord Paget and Lord William Howard,  
Crave, in the same cause, hearing of your Grace.  
Hath he not written himself—infatuated—  
To sue you for his life?

MARY. His life? Oh, no;  
Not sued for that—he knows it were in vain.  
But so much of the anti-papal leaven  
Works in him yet, he hath pray'd me not to sully  
Mine own prerogative, and degrade the realm  
By seeking justice at a stranger's hand  
Against my natural subject. King and Queen,  
To whom he owes his loyalty after God,  
Shall these accuse him to a foreign prince?

Death would not grieve him more. I cannot be  
True to this realm of England and the Pope  
Together, says the heretic.

POLE.

And there errs ;

As he hath ever err'd thro' vanity.  
A secular kingdom is but as the body  
Lacking a soul ; and in itself a beast.  
The Holy Father in a secular kingdom  
Is as the soul descending out of heaven  
Into a body generate.

MARY. Write to him, then.

POLE. I will.

MARY.                   And sharply, Pole.

POLE. Here come the Cranmerites!

*Enter* THIRLBY, LORD PAGET, LORD WILLIAM HOWARD.

HOWARD. Health to your Grace ! Good morrow,  
my Lord Cardinal ;  
We make our humble prayer unto your Grace  
That Cranmer may withdraw to foreign parts,  
Or into private life within the realm.  
In several bills and declarations, Madam,  
He hath recanted all his heresies.

PAGET. Ay, ay; if Bonner have not forged the bills. [*Aside.*

MARY. Did not More die, and Fisher? he must burn.

HOWARD. He hath recanted, Madam.

MARY. The better for him.  
He burns in Purgatory, not in Hell.

HOWARD. Ay, ay, your Grace; but it was never seen  
That any one recanting thus at full,  
As Cranmer hath, came to the fire on earth.

MARY. It will be seen now, then.

THIRLBY. O Madam, Madam!  
I thus implore you, low upon my knees,  
To reach the hand of mercy to my friend.  
I have err'd with him; with him I have recanted.  
What human reason is there why my friend  
Should meet with lesser mercy than myself?

MARY. My Lord of Ely, this. After a riot  
We hang the leaders, let their following go.  
Cranmer is head and father of these heresies,  
New learning as they call it; yea, may God  
Forget me at most need when I forget  
Her foul divorce—my sainted mother—No!—

HOWARD. Ay, ay, but mighty doctors doubted there.  
The Pope himself waver'd; and more than one  
Row'd in that galley—Gardiner to wit,  
Whom truly I deny not to have been  
Your faithful friend and trusty councillor.  
Hath not your Highness ever read his book,

His tractate upon True Obedience,  
Writ by himself and Bonner?

MARY. I will take  
Such order with all bad, heretical books  
That none shall hold them in his house and live,  
Henceforward. No, my Lord.

HOWARD. Then never read it.  
The truth is here. Your father was a man  
Of such colossal kinghood, yet so courteous,  
Except when wroth, you scarce could meet his eye  
And hold your own; and were he wroth indeed,  
You held it less, or not at all. I say,  
Your father had a will that beat men down;  
Your father had a brain that beat men down—

POLE. Not me, my Lord.

HOWARD. No, for you were not here;  
You sit upon this fallen Cranmer's throne;  
And it would more become you, my Lord Legate,  
To join a voice, so potent with her Highness,  
To ours in plea for Cranmer than to stand  
On naked self-assertion.

MARY. All your voices  
Are waves on flint. The heretic must burn.

HOWARD. Yet once he saved your Majesty's own  
life;  
Stood out against the King in your behalf,  
At his own peril.

MARY. I know not if he did ;  
And if he did I care not, my Lord Howard.  
My life is not so happy, no such boon,  
That I should spare to take a heretic priest's,  
Who saved it or not saved. Why do you vex me ?

PAGET. Yet to save Cranmer were to serve the  
Church,  
Your Majesty's I mean ; he is effaced,  
Self-blotted out ; so wounded in his honour,  
He can but creep down into some dark hole  
Like a hurt beast, and hide himself and die ;  
But if you burn him,—well, your Highness knows  
The saying, ' Martyr's blood—seed of the Church.'

MARY. Of the true Church ; but his is none, nor  
will be.  
You are too politic for me, my Lord Paget.  
And if he have to live so loath'd a life,  
It were more merciful to burn him now.

THIRLBY. O yet relent. O, Madam, if you knew  
him  
As I do, ever gentle, and so gracious,  
With all his learning—

MARY. Yet a heretic still.  
His learning makes his burning the more just.

THIRLBY. So worshipt of all those that came  
across him ;  
The stranger at his hearth, and all his house—



MARY. His children and his concubine, belike.

THIRLBY. To do him any wrong was to beget  
A kindness from him, for his heart was rich,  
Of such fine mould, that if you sow'd therein  
The seed of Hate, it blossom'd Charity.

POLE. 'After his kind it costs him nothing,'  
there's

An old world English adage to the point.  
These are but natural graces, my good Bishop,  
Which in the Catholic garden are as flowers,  
But on the heretic dunghill only weeds.

HOWARD. Such weeds make dunghills gracious.

MARY. Enough, my Lords.  
It is God's will, the Holy Father's will,  
And Philip's will, and mine, that he should burn.  
He is pronounced anathema.

HOWARD. Farewell, Madam,  
God grant you ampler mercy at your call  
Than you have shown to Cranmer. [*Exeunt* LORDS.]

POLE. After this,  
Your Grace will hardly care to overlook  
This same petition of the foreign exiles  
For Cranmer's life.

MARY. Make out the writ to-night.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—OXFORD. CRANMER IN PRISON.

CRANMER. Last night, I dream'd the faggots were  
alight,

And that myself was fasten'd to the stake,  
And found it all a visionary flame,  
Cool as the light in old decaying wood ;  
And then King Harry look'd from out a cloud,  
And bad me have good courage ; and I heard  
An angel cry 'There is more joy in Heaven,'—  
And after that, the trumpet of the dead.

[*Trumpets without.*

Why, there are trumpets blowing now : what is it ?

*Enter* FATHER COLE.

COLE. Cranmer, I come to question you again ;  
Have you remain'd in the true Catholic faith  
I left you in ?

CRANMER. In the true Catholic faith,  
By Heaven's grace, I am more and more confirm'd.  
Why are the trumpets blowing, Father Cole ?

COLE. Cranmer, it is decided by the Council  
That you to-day should read your recantation  
Before the people in St. Mary's Church.  
And there be many heretics in the town,  
Who loathe you for your late return to Rome,

And might assail you passing through the street,  
And tear you piecemeal : so you have a guard.

CRANMER. Or seek to rescue me. I thank the  
Council.

COLE. Do you lack any money ?

CRANMER. Nay, why should I ?  
The prison fare is good enough for me.

COLE. Ay, but to give the poor.

CRANMER. Hand it me, then !  
I thank you.

COLE. For a little space, farewell ;  
Until I see you in St. Mary's Church. [*Exit* COLE.]

CRANMER. It is against all precedent to burn  
One who recants ; they mean to pardon me.  
To give the poor—they give the poor who die.  
Well, burn me or not burn me I am fixt ;  
It is but a communion, not a mass :  
A holy supper, not a sacrifice ;  
No man can make his Maker—Villa Garcia.

*Enter* VILLA GARCIA.

VILLA GARCIA. Pray you write out this paper for  
me, Cranmer.

CRANMER. Have I not writ enough to satisfy  
you ?

VILLA GARCIA. It is the last.

CRANMER. Give it me, then.

[*He writes.*]

VILLA GARCIA. Now sign.

CRANMER. I have sign'd enough, and I will sign  
no more.

VILLA GARCIA. It is no more than what you have  
sign'd already,

The public form thereof.

CRANMER. It may be so ;

I sign it with my presence, if I read it.

VILLA GARCIA. But this is idle of you. Well, sir,  
well,

You are to beg the people to pray for you ;  
Exhort them to a pure and virtuous life ;  
Declare the Queen's right to the throne ; confess  
Your faith before all hearers ; and retract  
That Eucharistic doctrine in your book.  
Will you not sign it now ?

CRANMER. No, Villa Garcia,

I sign no more. Will they have mercy on me ?

VILLA GARCIA. Have you good hopes of mercy !  
So, farewell. [*Exit.*]

CRANMER. Good hopes, not theirs, have I that I  
am fixt,

Fixt beyond fall ; however, in strange hours,  
After the long brain-dazing colloquies,  
And thousand-times recurring argument

Of those two friars ever in my prison,  
When left alone in my despondency,  
Without a friend, a book, my faith would seem  
Dead or half-drown'd, or else swam heavily  
Against the huge corruptions of the Church,  
Monsters of mistradition, old enough  
To scare me into dreaming, 'what am I,  
Cranmer, against whole ages?' was it so,  
Or am I slandering my most inward friend,  
To veil the fault of my most outward foe—  
The soft and tremulous coward in the flesh?  
O higher, holier, earlier, purer church,  
I have found thee and not leave thee any more.  
It is but a communion, not a mass—  
No sacrifice, but a life-giving feast!  
(*Writes.*) So, so; this will I say—thus will I pray.  
[*Puts up the paper.*]

*Enter BONNER.*

BONNER. Good day, old friend; what, you look  
somewhat worn;  
And yet it is a day to test your health  
Ev'n at the best: I scarce have spoken with you  
Since when?—your degradation. At your trial  
Never stood up a bolder man than you;  
You would not cap the Pope's commissioner—

Your learning, and your stoutness, and your heresy,  
Dumbfounded half of us. So, after that,  
We had to dis-archbishop and unlord,  
And make you simple Cranmer once again.  
The common barber clipt your hair, and I  
Scraped from your finger-points the holy oil ;  
And worse than all, you had to kneel to *me* ;  
Which was not pleasant for you, Master Cranmer.  
Now you, that would not recognise the Pope,  
And you, that would not own the Real Presence,  
Have found a real presence in the stake,  
Which frights you back into the ancient faith ;  
And so you have recanted to the Pope.  
How are the mighty fallen, Master Cranmer !

CRANMER. You have been more fierce against the  
Pope than I ;  
But why fling back the stone he strikes me with ?

[*Aside.*

O Bonner, if I ever did you kindness—  
Power hath been given you to try faith by fire—  
Pray you, remembering how yourself have changed,  
Be somewhat pitiful, after I have gone,  
To the poor flock—to women and to children—  
That when I was archbishop held with me.

BONNER. Ay—gentle as they call you—live or  
die !  
Pitiful to this pitiful heresy ?

I must obey the Queen and Council, man.  
Win thro' this day with honour to yourself,  
And I'll say something for you—so—good-bye. [*Exit.*

CRANMER. This hard coarse man of old hath  
crouch'd to me  
Till I myself was half ashamed for him.

*Enter* THIRLBY.

Weep not, good Thirlby.

THIRLBY. Oh, my Lord, my Lord !  
My heart is no such block as Bonner's is :  
Who would not weep ?

CRANMER. Why do you so my-lord me,  
Who am disgraced ?

THIRLBY. On earth ; but saved in heaven  
By your recanting.

CRANMER. Will they burn me, Thirlby ?

THIRLBY. Alas, they will ; these burnings will not  
help  
The purpose of the faith ; but my poor voice  
Against them is a whisper to the roar  
Of a spring-tide.

CRANMER. And they will surely burn me ?

THIRLBY. Ay ; and besides, will have you in the  
church  
Repeat your recantation in the ears

Of all men, to the saving of their souls,  
Before your execution. May God help you  
Thro' that hard hour !

CRANMER. And may God bless you, Thirlby !  
Well, they shall hear my recantation there.

[*Exit* THIRLBY.]

Disgraced, dishonour'd !—not by them, indeed,  
By mine own self—by mine own hand !  
O thin-skinn'd hand and jutting veins, 'twas you  
That sign'd the burning of poor Joan of Kent ;  
But then she was a witch. You have written much,  
But you were never raised to plead for Frith,  
Whose dogmas I have reach'd : he was deliver'd  
To the secular arm to burn ; and there was Lambert ;  
Who can foresee himself ? truly these burnings,  
As Thirlby says, are profitless to the burners,  
And help the other side. You shall burn too,  
Burn first when I am burnt.  
Fire—inch by inch to die in agony ! Latimer  
Had a brief end—not Ridley. Hooper burn'd  
Three-quarters of an hour. Will my faggots  
Be wet as his were ? It is a day of rain.  
I will not muse upon it.  
My fancy takes the burner's part, and makes  
The fire seem even crueller than it is.  
No, I not doubt that God will give me strength,  
Albeit I have denied him.



*Enter SOTO and VILLA GARCIA.*

VILLA GARCIA.

We are ready

To take you to St. Mary's, Master Cranmer.

CRANMER. And I: lead on; ye loose me from  
my bonds. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—ST. MARY'S CHURCH.

COLE *in the Pulpit*, LORD WILLIAMS OF THAME *presiding*. LORD WILLIAM HOWARD, LORD PAGET, *and others*. CRANMER *enters between SOTO and VILLA GARCIA, and the whole Choir strike up 'Nunc Dimittis.'* CRANMER *is set upon a Scaffold before the people.*

COLE. Behold him—

*[A pause: people in the foreground.]*

PEOPLE. Oh, unhappy sight!

FIRST PROTESTANT. See how the tears run down  
his fatherly face.

SECOND PROTESTANT. James, didst thou ever see  
a carrion crow

Stand watching a sick beast before he dies?

FIRST PROTESTANT. Him perch'd up there? I  
wish some thunderbolt

Would make this Cole a cinder, pulpit and all.

COLE. Behold him, brethren : he hath cause to weep !—

So have we all : weep with him if ye will,

Yet——

It is expedient for one man to die,

Yea, for the people, lest the people die.

Yet wherefore should he die that hath return'd

To the one Catholic Universal Church,

Repentant of his errors ?

PROTESTANT *murmurs*. Ay, tell us that.

COLE. Those of the wrong side will despise the man,

Deeming him one that thro' the fear of death

Gave up his cause, except he seal his faith

In sight of all with flaming martyrdom.

CRANMER. Ay.

COLE. Ye hear him, and albeit there may seem  
According to the canons pardon due  
To him that so repents, yet are there causes  
Wherefore our Queen and Council at this time  
Adjudge him to the death. He hath been a traitor,  
A shaker and confounder of the realm ;  
And when the King's divorce was sued at Rome,  
He here, this heretic metropolitan,  
As if he had been the Holy Father, sat  
And judg'd it. Did I call him heretic ?  
A huge heresiarch ! never was it known

That any man so writing, preaching so,  
So poisoning the Church, so long continuing,  
Hath found his pardon ; therefore he must die,  
For warning and example.

Other reasons

There be for this man's ending, which our Queen  
And Council at this present deem it not  
Expedient to be known.

PROTESTANT *murmurs*. I warrant you.

COLE. Take therefore, all, example by this man,  
For if our Holy Queen not pardon him,  
Much less shall others in like cause escape,  
That all of you, the highest as the lowest,  
May learn there is no power against the Lord.  
There stands a man, once of so high degree,  
Chief prelate of our Church, archbishop, first  
In Council, second person in the realm,  
Friend for so long time of a mighty King ;  
And now ye see downfallen and debased  
From councillor to caitiff—fallen so low,  
The leprous flutterings of the byway, scum  
And offal of the city would not change  
Estates with him ; in brief, so miserable,  
There is no hope of better left for him,  
No place for worse.

Yet, Cranmer, be thou glad.

This is the work of God. He is glorified

In thy conversion : lo ! thou art reclaim'd ;  
He brings thee home : nor fear but that to-day  
Thou shalt receive the penitent thief's award,  
And be with Christ the Lord in Paradise.  
Remember how God made the fierce fire seem  
To those three children like a pleasant dew.  
Remember, too,  
The triumph of St. Andrew on his cross,  
The patience of St. Lawrence in the fire.  
Thus, if thou call on God and all the saints,  
God will beat down the fury of the flame,  
Or give thee saintly strength to undergo.  
And for thy soul shall masses here be sung  
By every priest in Oxford. Pray for him.

CRANMER. Ay, one and all, dear brothers, pray  
for me ;

Pray with one breath, one heart, one soul for me.

COLE. And now, lest anyone among you doubt  
The man's conversion and remorse of heart,  
Yourselves shall hear him speak. Speak, Master  
Cranmer,

Fulfil your promise made me, and proclaim  
Your true undoubted faith, that all may hear.

CRANMER. And that I will. O God, Father of  
Heaven !

O Son of God, Redeemer of the world !

O Holy Ghost ! proceeding from them both,

Three persons and one God, have mercy on me,  
Most miserable sinner, wretched man.  
I have offended against heaven and earth  
More grievously than any tongue can tell.  
Then whither should I flee for any help?  
I am ashamed to lift my eyes to heaven,  
And I can find no refuge upon earth.  
Shall I despair then?—God forbid! O God,  
For thou art merciful, refusing none  
That come to Thee for succour, unto Thee,  
Therefore, I come; humble myself to Thee;  
Saying, O Lord God, although my sins be great,  
For thy great mercy have mercy! O God the Son,  
Not for slight faults alone, when thou becamest  
Man in the Flesh, was the great mystery wrought;  
O God the Father, not for little sins  
Didst thou yield up thy Son to human death;  
But for the greatest sin that can be sinn'd,  
Yea, even such as mine, incalculable,  
Unpardonable,—sin against the light,  
The truth of God, which I had proven and known.  
Thy mercy must be greater than all sin.  
Forgive me, Father, for no merit of mine,  
But that Thy name by man be glorified,  
And Thy most blessed Son's, who died for man.

Good people, every man at time of death  
Would fain set forth some saying that may live

After his death and better humankind ;  
For death gives life's last word a power to live,  
And, like the stone-cut epitaph, remain  
After the vanish'd voice, and speak to men.  
God grant me grace to glorify my God !  
And first I say it is a grievous case,  
Many so dote upon this bubble world,  
Whose colours in a moment break and fly,  
They care for nothing else. What saith St. John :—  
' Love of this world is hatred against God.'  
Again, I pray you all that, next to God,  
You do un murmuringly and willingly  
Obey your King and Queen, and not for dread  
Of these alone, but from the fear of Him  
Whose ministers they be to govern you.  
Thirdly, I pray you all to live together  
Like brethren ; yet what hatred Christian men  
Bear to each other, seeming not as brethren,  
But mortal foes ! But do you good to all  
As much as in you lieth. Hurt no man more  
Than you would harm your loving natural brother  
Of the same roof, same breast. If any do,  
Albeit he think himself at home with God,  
Of this be sure, he is whole worlds away.

PROTESTANT *murmurs*. What sort of brothers  
then be those that lust  
To burn each other ?

WILLIAMS. Peace among you, there !

CRANMER. Fourthly, to those that own exceeding  
wealth,

Remember that sore saying spoken once  
By Him that was the truth, 'How hard it is  
For the rich man to enter into Heaven ;'  
Let all rich men remember that hard word.  
I have not time for more : if ever, now  
Let them flow forth in charity, seeing now  
The poor so many, and all food so dear.  
Long have I lain in prison, yet have heard  
Of all their wretchedness. Give to the poor,  
Ye give to God. He is with us in the poor.

And now, and forasmuch as I have come  
To the last end of life, and thereupon  
Hangs all my past, and all my life to be,  
Either to live with Christ in Heaven with joy,  
Or to be still in pain with devils in hell ;  
And, seeing in a moment, I shall find

*[Pointing upwards.]*

Heaven or else hell ready to swallow me,

*[Pointing downwards.]*

I shall declare to you my very faith  
Without all colour.

COLE. Hear him, my good brethren.

CRANMER. I do believe in God, Father of all ;  
In every article of the Catholic faith,

And every syllable taught us by our Lord,  
His prophets, and apostles, in the Testaments,  
Both Old and New.

COLE. Be plainer, Master Cranmer.

CRANMER. And now I come to the great cause  
that weighs

Upon my conscience more than anything  
Or said or done in all my life by me ;  
For there be writings I have set abroad  
Against the truth I knew within my heart,  
Written for fear of death, to save my life,  
If that might be ; the papers by my hand  
Sign'd since my degradation—by this hand

[*Holding out his right hand.*

Written and sign'd—I here renounce them all ;  
And, since my hand offended, having written  
Against my heart, my hand shall first be burnt,  
So I may come to the fire. [*Dead silence.*

PROTESTANT *murmurs.*

FIRST PROTESTANT. I knew it would be so.

SECOND PROTESTANT. Our prayers are heard !

THIRD PROTESTANT. God bless him !

CATHOLIC *murmurs.* Out upon him ! out upon  
him !

Liar ! dissembler ! traitor ! to the fire !

WILLIAMS (*raising his voice*). You know that you  
recanted all you said



Touching the sacrament in that same book  
You wrote against my Lord of Winchester ;  
Dissemble not ; play the plain Christian man.

CRANMER. Alas, my Lord,  
I have been a man loved plainness all my life ;  
I *did* dissemble, but the hour has come  
For utter truth and plainness ; wherefore, I say,  
I hold by all I wrote within that book.

Moreover,  
As for the Pope I count him Antichrist,  
With all his devil's doctrines ; and refuse,  
Reject him, and abhor him. I have said.

[*Cries on all sides, 'Pull him down ! Away with him !'*]

COLE. Ay, stop the heretic's mouth ! Hale him  
away !

WILLIAMS. Harm him not, harm him not ! have  
him to the fire !

[*CRANMER goes out between Two Friars, smiling ;  
hands are reached to him from the crowd. LORD  
WILLIAM HOWARD and LORD PAGET are left  
alone in the church.*]

PAGET. The nave and aisles all empty as a fool's  
jest !

No, here's Lord William Howard. What, my Lord,  
You have not gone to see the burning ?

HOWARD. Fie !

To stand at ease, and stare as at a show,



HOWARD.                      His eighty years  
Look'd somewhat crooked on him in his frieze ;  
But after they had stript him to his shroud,  
He stood upright, a lad of twenty-one,  
And gather'd with his hands the starting flame,  
And wash'd his hands and all his face therein,  
Until the powder suddenly blew him dead.  
Ridley was longer burning ; but he died  
As manfully and boldly, and, 'fore God,  
I know them heretics, but right English ones.  
If ever, as heaven grant, we clash with Spain,  
Our Ridley-soldiers and our Latimer-sailors  
Will teach her something.

PAGET.                      Your mild Legate Pole  
Will tell you that the devil helpt them thro' it.

[*A murmur of the Crowd in the distance.*]

Hark, how those Roman wolfdogs howl and bay him!

HOWARD.    Might it not be the other side rejoicing  
In his brave end?

PAGET.                      They are too crush'd, too broken,  
They can but weep in silence.

HOWARD.                      Ay, ay, Paget,  
They have brought it in large measure on themselves.  
Have I not heard them mock the blessed Host  
In songs so lewd, the beast might roar his claim  
To being in God's image, more than they?  
Have I not seen the gamekeeper, the groom,



Half beast and fool as appertaining to it ;  
Altho' your Lordship hath as little of each  
Cleaving to your original Adam-clay,  
As may be consonant with mortality.

HOWARD. We talk and Cranmer suffers.  
The kindest man I ever knew ; see, see,  
I speak of him in the past. Unhappy land !  
Hard-natured Queen, half-Spanish in herself,  
And grafted on the hard-grain'd stock of Spain--  
Her life, since Philip left her, and she lost  
Her fierce desire of bearing him a child,  
Hath, like a brief and bitter winter's day,  
Gone narrowing down and darkening to a close.  
There will be more conspiracies, I fear.

PAGET. Ay, ay, beware of France.

HOWARD. O Paget, Paget !

I have seen heretics of the poorer sort,  
Expectant of the rack from day to day,  
To whom the fire were welcome, lying chain'd  
In breathless dungeons over steaming sewers,  
Fed with rank bread that crawl'd upon the tongue,  
And putrid water, every drop a worm,  
Until they died of rotted limbs ; and then  
Cast on the dunghill naked, and become  
Hideously alive again from head to heel,  
Made even the carrion-nosing mongrel vomit  
With hate and horror.

PAGET.                                Nay, you sicken *me*  
To hear you.

HOWARD.    Fancy-sick ; these things are done,  
Done right against the promise of this Queen  
Twice given.

PAGET.            No faith with heretics, my Lord !  
Hist ! there be two old gossips—gospellers,  
I take it ; stand behind the pillar here ;  
I warrant you they talk about the burning.

*Enter TWO OLD WOMEN.    JOAN, and after her TIB.*

JOAN.    Why, it be Tib !

TIB.    I cum behind tha, gall, and couldn't make  
tha hear. Eh, the wind and the wet ! What a day,  
what a day ! nigh upo' judgement daay loike.    Pwoaps  
be pretty things, Joan, but they wunt set i' the Lord's  
cheer o' that daay.

JOAN.    I must set down myself, Tib ; it be a  
var waay vor my owld legs up vro' Islip. Eh, my  
rheumatizy be that bad howiver be I to win to the  
burnin'.

TIB.    I should saay 'twur ower by now. I'd ha'  
been here avore, but Dumble wur blow'd wi' the wind,  
and Dumble's the best milcher in Islip.

JOAN.    Our Daisy's as good 'z her.

TIB.    Noa, Joan.

JOAN. Our Daisy's butter's as good 'z hern.

TIB. Noa, Joan.

JOAN. Our Daisy's cheeses be better.

TIB. Noa, Joan.

JOAN. Eh, then ha' thy waay wi' me, Tib; ez thou hast wi' thy owld man.

TIB. Ay, Joan, and my owld man wur up and awaay betimes wi' dree hard eggs for a good pleast at the burnin'; and barrin' the wet, Hodge 'ud ha' been a-harrowin' o' white peasen i' the outfield—and barrin' the wind, Dumble wur blow'd wi' the wind, so 'z we was forced to stick her, but we fetched her round at last. Thank the Lord therevore. Dumble's the best milcher in Islip.

JOAN. Thou's thy way wi' man and beast, Tib. I wonder at tha', it beats me! Eh, but I do know ez Pwoaps and vires be bad things; tell 'ee now, I heerd summat as summun towld summun o' owld Bishop Gardiner's end; there wur an owld lord a-cum to dine wi' un, and a wur so owld a couldn't bide vor his dinner, but a had to bide howsomiver, vor 'I wunt dine,' says my Lord Bishop, says he, 'not till I hears ez Latimer and Ridley be a-vire;' and so they bided on and on till vour o' the clock, till his man cum in post vro' here, and tells un ez the vire has tuk holt. 'Now,' says the Bishop, says he, 'we'll gwo to dinner;' and the owld lord fell to 's meat wi' a will, God bless

un ! but Gardiner wur struck down like by the hand  
o' God avore a could taste a mossel, and a set un  
all a-vire, so 'z the tongue on un cum a-lolluping  
out o' 'is mouth as black as a rat. Thank the Lord,  
therevore.

PAGET. The fools !

TIB. Ay, Joan ; and Queen Mary gwoes on a-  
burnin' and a-burnin', to get her baaby born ; but all  
her burnin's 'ill never burn out the hypocrisy that  
makes the water in her. There's nought but the vire  
of God's hell ez can burn out that.

JOAN. Thank the Lord, therevore.

PAGET. The fools !

TIB. A-burnin', and a-burnin', and a-makin' o'  
volk madder and madder ; but tek thou my word  
vor't, Joan,—and I bean't wrong not twice i' ten year  
—the burnin' o' the owld archbishop 'll burn the  
Pwoap out o' this 'ere land vor iver and iver.

HOWARD. Out of the church, you brace of cursed  
crones,

Or I will have you duck'd ! (*Women hurry out.*)  
Said I not right ?

For how should reverend prelate or throned prince  
Brook for an hour such brute malignity ?  
Ah, what an acrid wine has Luther brew'd !

PAGET. Pooh, pooh, my Lord ! poor garrulous  
country-wives.



Buy you their cheeses, and they'll side with you ;  
You cannot judge the liquor from the lees.

HOWARD. I think that in some sort we may.

But see,

*Enter PETERS.*

Peters, my gentleman, an honest Catholic,  
Who follow'd with the crowd to Cranmer's fire.  
One that would neither misreport nor lie,  
Not to gain paradise : no, nor if the Pope,  
Charged him to do it—he is white as death.  
Peters, how pale you look ! you bring the smoke  
Of Cranmer's burning with you.

PETERS.

Twice or thrice

The smoke of Cranmer's burning wrapt me round.

HOWARD. Peters, you know me Catholic, but  
English.

Did he die bravely ? Tell me that, or leave  
All else untold.

PETERS. My Lord, he died most bravely.

HOWARD. Then tell me all.

PAGET.

Ay, Master Peters, tell us.

PETERS. You saw him how he past among the  
crowd ;

And ever as he walk'd the Spanish friars  
Still plied him with entreaty and reproach :  
But Cranmer, as the helmsman at the helm  
Steers, ever looking to the happy haven

Where he shall rest at night, moved to his death ;  
And I could see that many silent hands  
Came from the crowd and met his own ; and thus  
When we had come where Ridley burnt with Latimer,  
He, with a cheerful smile, as one whose mind  
Is all made up, in haste put off the rags  
They had mock'd his misery with, and all in white,  
His long white beard, which he had never shaven  
Since Henry's death, down-sweeping to the chain,  
Wherewith they bound him to the stake, he stood  
More like an ancient father of the Church,  
Than heretic of these times ; and still the friars  
Plied him, but Cranmer only shook his head,  
Or answer'd them in smiling negatives ;  
Whereat Lord Williams gave a sudden cry :—  
'Make short ! make short !' and so they lit the wood.  
Then Cranmer lifted his left hand to heaven,  
And thrust his right into the bitter flame ;  
And crying, in his deep voice, more than once,  
'This hath offended—this unworthy hand !'  
So held it till it all was burn'd, before  
The flame had reach'd his body ; I stood near—  
Mark'd him—he never uttered moan of pain :  
He never stirr'd or writhed, but, like a statue,  
Unmoving in the greatness of the flame,  
Gave up the ghost ; and so past martyr-like—  
Martyr I may not call him—past—but whither ?

PAGET. To purgatory, man, to purgatory.

PETERS. Nay, but, my Lord, he denied purgatory.

PAGET. Why then to heaven, and God ha' mercy  
on him.

HOWARD. Paget, despite his fearful heresies,  
I loved the man, and needs must moan for him ;  
O Cranmer !

PAGET. But your moan is useless now :  
Come out, my Lord, it is a world of fools. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—LONDON. HALL IN THE PALACE.

QUEEN, SIR NICHOLAS HEATH.

HEATH. Madam,  
I do assure you, that it must be look'd to :  
Calais is but ill-garrison'd, in Guisnes  
Are scarce two hundred men, and the French fleet  
Rule in the narrow seas. It must be look'd to,  
If war should fall between yourself and France ;  
Or you will lose your Calais.

MARY. It shall be look'd to ;  
I wish you a good morning, good Sir Nicholas :  
Here is the King. [*Exit* HEATH.]

*Enter* PHILIP.

PHILIP. Sir Nicholas tells you true,  
And you must look to Calais when I go.

MARY. Go? must you go, indeed—again—so  
soon?

Why, nature's licensed vagabond, the swallow,  
That might live always in the sun's warm heart,  
Stays longer here in our poor north than you :—  
Knows where he nested—ever comes again.

PHILIP. And, Madam, so shall I.

MARY. O, will you ? will you ?  
I am faint with fear that you will come no more.

PHILIP. Ay, ay ; but many voices call me hence.

MARY. Voices—I hear unhappy rumours—nay,  
I say not, I believe. What voices call you  
Dearer than mine that should be dearest to you ?  
Alas, my Lord ! what voices and how many ?

PHILIP. The voices of Castille and Aragon,  
Granada, Naples, Sicily, and Milan,—  
The voices of Franche-Comté, and the Netherlands,  
The voices of Peru and Mexico,  
Tunis, and Oran, and the Philipppines,  
And all the fair spice-islands of the East.

MARY (*admiringly*). You are the mightiest  
monarch upon earth,  
I but a little Queen : and, so indeed,  
Need you the more.

PHILIP. A little Queen ! but when  
I came to wed your majesty, Lord Howard,  
Sending an insolent shot that dash'd the seas  
Upon us, made us lower our kingly flag  
To yours of England.

MARY.                               Howard is all English !  
There is no king, not were he ten times king,  
Ten times our husband, but must lower his flag  
To that of England in the seas of England.

PHILIP.   Is that your answer ?

MARY.                               Being Queen of England,  
I have none other.

PHILIP.                               So.

MARY.                               But wherefore not  
Helm the huge vessel of your state, my liege,  
Here by the side of her who loves you most ?

PHILIP.   No, Madam, no ! a candle in the sun  
Is all but smoke—a star beside the moon  
Is all but lost ; your people will not crown me—  
Your people are as cheerless as your clime ;  
Hate me and mine : witness the brawls, the gibbets.  
Here swings a Spaniard—there an Englishman ;  
The peoples are unlike as their complexion ;  
Yet will I be your swallow and return—  
But now I cannot bide.

MARY.                               Not to help *me* ?  
They hate *me* also for my love to you,  
My Philip ; and these judgments on the land—  
Harvestless autumns, horrible agues, plague—

PHILIP.   The blood and sweat of heretics at the stake  
Is God's best dew upon the barren field.  
Burn more !

MARY. I will, I will ; and you will stay ?

PHILIP. Have I not said ? Madam, I came to  
sue

Your Council and yourself to declare war.

MARY. Sir, there are many English in your ranks  
To help your battle.

PHILIP. So far, good. I say  
I came to sue your Council and yourself  
To declare war against the King of France.

MARY. Not to see me ?

PHILIP. Ay, Madam, to see you.  
Unalterably and pesteringly fond ! [*Aside.*  
But, soon or late you must have war with France ;  
King Henry warms your traitors at his hearth.  
Carew is there, and Thomas Stafford there.  
Courtenay, belike—

MARY. A fool and featherhead !

PHILIP. Ay, but they use his name. In brief, this  
Henry  
Stirs up your land against you to the intent  
That you may lose your English heritage.  
And then, your Scottish namesake marrying  
The Dauphin, he would weld France, England, Scot-  
land,  
Into one sword to hack at Spain and me.

MARY. And yet the Pope is now colleague with  
France ;

You make your wars upon him down in Italy :—  
Philip, can that be well?

PHILIP.                               Content you, Madam ;  
You must abide my judgment, and my father's,  
Who deems it a most just and holy war.  
The Pope would cast the Spaniard out of Naples :  
He calls us worse than Jews, Moors, Saracens.  
The Pope has pushed his horns beyond his mitre—  
Beyond his province. Now,  
Duke Alva will but touch him on the horns,  
And he withdraws ; and of his holy head—  
For Alva is true son of the true church—  
No hair is harm'd. Will you not help me here ?

MARY. Alas ! the Council will not hear of war.  
They say your wars are not the wars of England.  
They will not lay more taxes on a land  
So hunger-nipt and wretched ; and you know  
The crown is poor. We have given the church-lands  
back :

The nobles would not ; nay, they clapt their hands  
Upon their swords when ask'd ; and therefore God  
Is hard upon the people. What's to be done ?  
Sir, I will move them in your cause again,  
And we will raise us loans and subsidies  
Among the merchants ; and Sir Thomas Gresham  
Will aid us. There is Antwerp and the Jews.

PHILIP. Madam, my thanks.



MARY. And you will stay your going?

PHILIP. And further to discourage and lay lame  
The plots of France, altho' you love her not,  
You must proclaim Elizabeth your heir.  
She stands between you and the Queen of Scots.

MARY. The Queen of Scots at least is Catholic.

PHILIP. Ay, Madam, Catholic; but I will not have  
The King of France the King of England too.

MARY. But she's a heretic, and, when I am gone,  
Brings the new learning back.

PHILIP. It must be done.  
You must proclaim Elizabeth your heir.

MARY. Then it is done; but you will stay your  
going  
Somewhat beyond your settled purpose?

PHILIP. No!

MARY. What, not one day?

PHILIP. You beat upon the rock.

MARY. And I am broken there.

PHILIP. Is this a place  
To wail in, Madam? what! a public hall.  
Go in, I pray you.

MARY. Do not seem so changed.  
Say go; but only say it lovingly.

PHILIP. You do mistake. I am not one to  
change.  
I never loved you more.

MARY.                         Sire, I obey you.  
Come quickly.

PHILIP.            Ay.                            [*Exit* MARY.]

*Enter* COUNT DE FERIA.

FERIA (*aside*). The Queen in tears!

PHILIP. FERIA!

Hast thou not mark'd—come closer to mine ear—  
How doubly aged this Queen of ours hath grown  
Since she lost hope of bearing us a child?

FERIA. Sire, if your Grace hath mark'd it, so have I.

PHILIP. Hast thou not likewise mark'd Elizabeth,  
How fair and royal—like a Queen, indeed?

FERIA. Allow me the same answer as before—  
That if your Grace hath mark'd her, so have I.

PHILIP. Good, now; methinks my Queen is like  
 enough  
 To leave me by and by.

FERIA. To leave you, sire?

PHILIP. I mean not like to live. Elizabeth—  
To Philibert of Savoy, as you know,  
We meant to wed her ; but I am not sure  
She will not serve me better—so my Queen  
Would leave me—as—my wife.

FERIA. Sire, even so.

PHILIP. She will not have Prince Philibert of Savoy.

FERIA. No, sire.

PHILIP. I have to pray you, some odd time,  
To sound the Princess carelessly on this ;  
Not as from me, but as your phantasy ;  
And tell me how she takes it.

FERIA. Sire, I will.

PHILIP. I am not certain but that Philibert  
Shall be the man ; and I shall urge his suit  
Upon the Queen, because I am not certain :  
You understand, Feria.

FERIA. Sire, I do.

PHILIP. And if you be not secret in this matter,  
You understand me there, too ?

FERIA. Sire, I do.

PHILIP. You must be sweet and supple, like a  
Frenchman.

She is none of those who loathe the honeycomb.

[*Exit* FERIA.]

*Enter* RENARD.

RENARD. My liege, I bring you goodly tidings.

PHILIP. Well ?

RENARD. There *will* be war with France, at last,  
my liege ;

Sir Thomas Stafford, a bull-headed ass,

Sailing from France, with thirty Englishmen,  
Hath taken Scarboro' Castle, north of York ;  
Proclaims himself protector, and affirms  
The Queen has forfeited her right to reign  
By marriage with an alien—other things  
As idle ; a weak Wyatt ! Little doubt  
This buzz will soon be silenced ; but the Council  
(I have talk'd with some already) are for war.  
This is the fifth conspiracy hatch'd in France ;  
They show their teeth upon it ; and your Grace,  
So you will take advice of mine, should stay  
Yet for awhile, to shape and guide the event.

PHILIP. Good ! Renard, I will stay then.

RENARD. Also, sire,  
Might I not say—to please your wife, the Queen ?

PHILIP. Ay, Renard, if you care to put it so.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

MARY, *sitting: a rose in her hand.* LADY CLARENCE.

*Alice in the background.*

MARY. Look ! I have play'd with this poor rose  
so long  
I have broken off the head.

LADY CLARENCE. Your Grace hath been

More merciful to many a rebel head  
That should have fallen, and may rise again.

MARY. There were not many hang'd for Wyatt's  
rising.

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, not two hundred.

MARY. I could weep for them  
And her, and mine own self and all the world.

LADY CLARENCE. For her? for whom, your  
Grace?

*Enter USHER.*

USHER. The Cardinal.

*Enter CARDINAL POLE. (MARY rises.)*

MARY. Reginald Pole, what news hath plagued  
thy heart?

What makes thy favour like the bloodless head  
Fall'n on the block, and held up by the hair?  
Philip?—

POLE. No, Philip is as warm in life  
As ever.

MARY. Ay, and then as cold as ever.  
Is Calais taken?

POLE. Cousin, there hath chanced  
A sharper harm to England and to Rome,  
Than Calais taken. Julius the Third  
Was ever just, and mild, and father-like;

But this new Pope Caraffa, Paul the Fourth,  
Not only reft me of that legateship  
Which Julius gave me, and the legateship  
Annex'd to Canterbury—nay, but worse—  
And yet I must obey the Holy Father,  
And so must you, good cousin ;—worse than all,  
A passing bell toll'd in a dying ear—  
He hath cited me to Rome, for heresy,  
Before his Inquisition.

MARY. I knew it, cousin,  
But held from you all papers sent by Rome,  
That you might rest among us, till the Pope,  
To compass which I wrote myself to Rome,  
Reversed his doom, and that you might not seem  
To disobey his Holiness.

POLE.                         He hates Philip ;  
He is all Italian, and he hates the Spaniard ;  
He cannot dream that *I* advised the war ;  
He strikes thro' me at Philip and yourself.  
Nay, but I know it of old, he hates me too ;  
So brands me in the stare of Christendom  
A heretic !  
  
Now, even now, when bow'd before my time,  
The house half-ruin'd ere the lease be out ;  
When I should guide the Church in peace at home,  
After my twenty years of banishment,  
And all my lifelong labour to uphold

The primacy—a heretic. Long ago,  
When I was ruler in the patrimony,  
I was too lenient to the Lutheran,  
And I and learned friends among ourselves  
Would freely canvass certain Lutheranisms.  
What then, he knew I was no Lutheran.  
A heretic !  
He drew this shaft against me to the head,  
When it was thought I might be chosen Pope,  
But then withdrew it. In full consistory,  
When I was made Archbishop, he approved me.  
And how should he have sent me Legate hither,  
Deeming me heretic ? and what heresy since ?  
But he was evermore mine enemy,  
And hates the Spaniard—fiery-choleric,  
A drinker of black, strong, volcanic wines,  
That ever make him fierier. I, a heretic ?  
Your Highness knows that in pursuing heresy  
I have gone beyond your late Lord Chancellor,—  
He cried Enough ! enough ! before his death.—  
Gone beyond him and mine own natural man  
(It was God's cause) ; so far they call me now,  
The scourge and butcher of their English church.

MARY. Have courage, your reward is Heaven  
itself.

POLE. They groan amen ; they swarm into the  
fire

Like flies—for what? no dogma. They know nothing;

They burn for nothing.

MARY. You have done your best.

POLE. Have done my best, and as a faithful son,  
That all day long hath wrought his father's work,  
When back he comes at evening hath the door  
Shut on him by the father whom he loved,  
His early follies cast into his teeth,  
And the poor son turn'd out into the street  
To sleep, to die—I shall die of it, cousin.

MARY. I pray you be not so disconsolate;  
I still will do mine utmost with the Pope.  
Poor cousin !

Have not I been the fast friend of your life  
Since mine began, and it was thought we two  
Might make one flesh, and cleave unto each other  
As man and wife?

POLE.                      Ah, cousin, I remember  
How I would dandle you upon my knee  
At lisping-age. I watch'd you dancing once  
With your huge father ; he look'd the Great Harry,  
You but his cockboat ; prettily you did it,  
And innocently. No—we were not made  
One flesh in happiness, no happiness here ;  
But now we are made one flesh in misery ;  
Our bridemaids are not lovely—Disappointment,



Ingratitude, Injustice, Evil-tongue,  
Labour-in-vain.

MARY. Surely, not all in vain.

Peace, cousin, peace! I am sad at heart myself.

POLE. Our altar is a mound of dead men's clay,  
Dug from the grave that yawns for us beyond ;  
And there is one Death stands behind the Groom,  
And there is one Death stands behind the Bride—

MARY. Have you been looking at the 'Dance of  
Death'?

POLE. No ; but these libellous papers which I  
found

Strewn in your palace. Look you here—the Pope  
Pointing at me with 'Pole, the heretic,  
Thou hast burnt others, do thou burn thyself,  
Or I will burn thee ;' and this other ; see !—  
'We pray continually for the death  
Of our accursed Queen and Cardinal Pole.'  
This last—I dare not read it her.

[*Aside.*

MARY.

Away !

Why do you bring me these?

I thought you knew me better. I never read,  
I tear them ; they come back upon my dreams.  
The hands that write them should be burnt clean off  
As Cranmer's, and the fiends that utter them  
Tongue-torn with pincers, lash'd to death, or lie  
Famishing in black cells, while famish'd rats

Eat them alive. Why do they bring me these?  
Do you mean to drive me mad?

POLE. I had forgotten  
How these poor libels trouble you. Your pardon,  
Sweet cousin, and farewell! 'O bubble world,  
Whose colours in a moment break and fly!'  
Why, who said that? I know not—true enough!  
[*Puts up the papers, all but the last, which falls.*

*Exit* POLE.

ALICE. If Cranmer's spirit were a mocking one,  
And heard these two, there might be sport for him.

[*Aside.*

MARY. Clarence, they hate me; even while I  
speak  
There lurks a silent dagger, listening  
In some dark closet, some long gallery, drawn,  
And panting for my blood as I go by.

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, Madam, there be loyal  
papers too,  
And I have often found them.

MARY. Find me one!

LADY CLARENCE. Ay, Madam; but Sir Nicholas  
Heath, the Chancellor,  
Would see your Highness.

MARY. Wherefore should I see him?

LADY CLARENCE. Well, Madam, he may bring  
you news from Philip.

MARY. So, Clarence.

LADY CLARENCE. Let me first put up your hair ;  
It tumbles all abroad.

MARY. And the gray dawn  
Of an old age that never will be mine  
Is all the clearer seen. No, no ; what matters ?  
Forlorn I am, and let me look forlorn.

*Enter* SIR NICHOLAS HEATH.

HEATH. I bring your Majesty such grievous news  
I grieve to bring it. Madam, Calais is taken.

MARY. What traitor spoke ? Here, let my cousin  
Pole

Seize him and burn him for a Lutheran.

HEATH. Her Highness is unwell. I will retire.

LADY CLARENCE. Madam, your Chancellor, Sir  
Nicholas Heath.

MARY. Sir Nicholas ! I am stunn'd—Nicholas  
Heath ?

Methought some traitor smote me on the head.

What said you, my good Lord, that our brave  
English

Had sallied out from Calais and driven back  
The Frenchmen from their trenches ?

HEATH. Alas ! no.  
That gateway to the mainland over which



That my brief reign in England be defamed  
Thro' all her angry chronicles hereafter  
By loss of Calais. Grant me Calais. Philip,  
We have made war upon the Holy Father  
All for your sake : what good could come of that ?

LADY CLARENCE. No, Madam, not against the  
Holy Father ;

You did but help King Philip's war with France,  
Your troops were never down in Italy.

MARY. I am a byword. Heretic and rebel  
Point at me and make merry. Philip gone !  
And Calais gone ! Time that I were gone too !

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, if the fetid gutter had a  
voice

And cried I was not clean, what should I care ?  
Or you, for heretic cries ? And I believe,  
Spite of your melancholy Sir Nicholas,  
Your England is as loyal as myself.

MARY (*seeing the paper dropt by POLE*). There !  
there ! another paper ! Said you not  
Many of these were loyal ? Shall I try  
If this be one of such ?

LADY CLARENCE. Let it be, let it be.  
God pardon me ! I have never yet found one.

[*Aside.*

MARY (*reads*). 'Your people hate you as your  
husband hates you.'

Clarence, Clarence, what have I done ? what sin  
Beyond all grace, all pardon ? Mother of God,  
Thou knowest never woman meant so well,  
And fared so ill in this disastrous world.  
My people hate me and desire my death.

LADY CLARENCE. No, Madam, no.

MARY. My husband hates me, and desires my  
death.

LADY CLARENCE. No, Madam ; these are libels.

MARY. I hate myself, and I desire my death.

LADY CLARENCE. Long live your Majesty ! Shall  
Alice sing you

One of her pleasant songs ? Alice, my child,  
Bring us your lute (*ALICE goes*). They say the gloom  
of Saul

Was lighten'd by young David's harp.

MARY. Too young !  
And never knew a Philip.

*Re-enter ALICE.*

Give *me* the lute.

He hates me !

(*She sings.*)

Hapless doom of woman happy in betrothing !  
Beauty passes like a breath and love is lost in loathing :  
Low, my lute ; speak low, my lute, but say the world is nothing—  
Low, lute, low !

Love will hover round the flowers when they first awaken ;  
Love will fly the fallen leaf, and not be overtaken ;  
Low, my lute ! oh low, my lute ! we fade and are forsaken—  
Low, dear lute, low !

Take it away ! not low enough for me !

ALICE. Your Grace hath a low voice.

MARY. How dare you say it ?

Even for that he hates me. A low voice  
Lost in a wilderness where none can hear !

A voice of shipwreck on a shoreless sea !

A low voice from the dust and from the grave

(*Sitting on the ground*). There, am I low enough  
now ?

ALICE. Good Lord ! how grim and ghastly looks  
her Grace,

With both her knees drawn upward to her chin.

There was an old-world tomb beside my father's,

And this was open'd, and the dead were found

Sitting, and in this fashion ; she looks a corpse.

*Enter* LADY MAGDALEN DACRES.

LADY MAGDALEN. Madam, the Count de Feria  
waits without,

In hopes to see your Highness.

LADY CLARENCE (*pointing to MARY*). Wait he  
must—

Her trance again. She neither sees nor hears,  
And may not speak for hours.

LADY MAGDALEN.                      Unhappiest  
Of Queens and wives and women !

ALICE (*in the foreground with* LADY MAGDALEN).

Of Philip. And all along

LADY MAGDALEN. Not so loud! Our Clarence  
there  
Sees ever such an aureole round the Queen,  
It gilds the greatest wronger of her peace,  
Who stands the nearest to her.

**Alice.** Ay, this Philip ;  
I used to love the Queen with all my heart—  
God help me, but methinks I love her less  
For such a dotage upon such a man.  
I would I were as tall and strong as you.

LADY MAGDALEN. I seem half-shamed at times to  
be so tall.

ALICE. You are the stateliest deer in all the  
herd—  
Beyond his aim—but I am small and scandalous,  
And love to hear bad tales of Philip.

LADY MAGDALEN. Why?  
I never heard him utter worse of you  
Than that you were low-statured.

ALICE. Does he think



Low stature is low nature, or all women's  
Low as his own?

LADY MAGDALEN. There you strike in the nail.  
This coarseness is a want of phantasy.  
It is the low man thinks the woman low;  
Sin is too dull to see beyond himself.

ALICE. Ah, Magdalen, sin is bold as well as dull.  
How dared he?

LADY MAGDALEN. Stupid soldiers oft are bold.  
Poor lads, they see not what the general sees,  
A risk of utter ruin. I am *not*  
Beyond his aim, or was not.

ALICE. Who? Not you?  
Tell, tell me; save my credit with myself.

LADY MAGDALEN. I never breathed it to a bird  
in the eaves,  
Would not for all the stars and maiden moon  
Our drooping Queen should know! In Hampton  
Court

My window look'd upon the corridor;  
And I was robing;—this poor throat of mine,  
Barer than I should wish a man to see it,—  
When he we speak of drove the window back,  
And, like a thief, push'd in his royal hand;  
But by God's providence a good stout staff  
Lay near me; and you know me strong of arm;  
I do believe I lamed his Majesty's

For a day or two, tho', give the Devil his due,  
I never found he bore me any spite.

ALICE. I would she could have wedded that poor  
youth,  
My Lord of Devon—light enough, God knows,  
And mixt with Wyatt's rising—and the boy  
Not out of him—but neither cold, coarse, cruel,  
And more than all—no Spaniard.

LADY CLARENCE. Not so loud.  
Lord Devon, girls ! what are you whispering here ?

ALICE. Probing an old state-secret—how it chanced  
That this young Earl was sent on foreign travel,  
Not lost his head.

LADY CLARENCE. There was no proof against him.

ALICE. Nay, Madam ; did not Gardiner intercept  
A letter which the Count de Noailles wrote  
To that dead traitor Wyatt, with full proof  
Of Courtenay's treason ? What became of that ?

LADY CLARENCE. Some say that Gardiner, out of  
love for him,  
Burnt it, and some relate that it was lost  
When Wyatt sack'd the Chancellor's house in South-  
wark.

Let dead things rest.

ALICE. Ay, and with him who died  
Alone in Italy.

LADY CLARENCE. Much changed, I hear,

Had put off levity and put graveness on.  
The foreign courts report him in his manner  
Noble as his young person and old shield.  
It might be so—but all is over now ;  
He caught a chill in the lagoons of Venice,  
And died in Padua.

MARY (*looking up suddenly*). Died in the true faith?

LADY CLARENCE. Ay, Madam, happily.

MARY. Happier he than I.

LADY MAGDALEN. It seems her Highness hath  
awaken'd. Think you

That I might dare to tell her that the Count——

MARY. I will see no man hence for evermore,  
Saving my confessor and my cousin Pole.

LADY MAGDALEN. It is the Count de Feria, my  
dear lady.

MARY. What Count?

LADY MAGDALEN. The Count de Feria, from his  
Majesty  
King Philip.

MARY. Philip ! quick ! loop up my hair !  
Throw cushions on that seat, and make it throne-  
like.

Arrange my dress—the gorgeous Indian shawl  
That Philip brought me in our happy days !—  
That covers all. So—am I somewhat Queenlike,  
Bride of the mightiest sovereign upon earth ?

LADY CLARENCE. Ay, so your Grace would bide  
a moment yet.

MARY. No, no, he brings a letter. I may die  
Before I read it. Let me see him at once.

*Enter COUNT DE FERIA (kneels).*

FERIA. I trust your Grace is well. (*Aside*) How  
her hand burns !

MARY. I am not well, but it will better me,  
Sir Count, to read the letter which you bring.

FERIA. Madam, I bring no letter.

MARY. How ! no letter ?

FERIA. His Highness is so vex'd with strange affairs—

MARY. That his own wife is no affair of his.

FERIA. Nay, Madam, nay ! he sends his veriest love,  
And says, he will come quickly.

MARY. Doth he, indeed ?  
You, sir, do *you* remember what *you* said  
When last you came to England ?

FERIA. Madam, I brought  
My King's congratulations ; it was hoped  
Your Highness was once more in happy state  
To give him an heir male.

MARY. Sir, you said more ;  
You said he would come quickly. I had horses  
On all the road from Dover, day and night ;

On all the road from Harwich, night and day ;  
But the child came not, and the husband came not ;  
And yet he will come quickly. . . Thou hast learnt  
Thy lesson, and I mine. There is no need  
For Philip so to shame himself again.

Return,

And tell him that I know he comes no more.

Tell him at last I know his love is dead,

And that I am in state to bring forth death—

Thou art commission'd to Elizabeth,

And not to me !

FERIA.                    Mere compliments and wishes.

But shall I take some message from your Grace ?

MARY. Tell her to come and close my dying eyes,  
And wear my crown, and dance upon my grave.

FERIA. Then I may say your Grace will see your  
sister ?

Your Grace is too low-spirited. Air and sunshine.

I would we had you, Madam, in our warm Spain.

You droop in your dim London.

MARY.                    Have him away !

I sicken of his readiness.

LADY CLARENCE.            My Lord Count,

Her Highness is too ill for colloquy.

FERIA (*kneels, and kisses her hand*). I wish her  
Highness better. (*Aside*) How her hand burns !

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.—A HOUSE NEAR LONDON.

ELIZABETH, STEWARD OF THE HOUSEHOLD,  
ATTENDANTS.

ELIZABETH. There's half an angel wrong'd in your  
account ;  
Methinks I am all angel, that I bear it  
Without more ruffling. Cast it o'er again.

STEWARD. I were whole devil if I wrong'd you,  
Madam. [Exit STEWARD.

ATTENDANT. The Count de Feria, from the King  
of Spain.

ELIZABETH. Ay !—let him enter. Nay, you need  
not go : [To her LADIES.  
Remain within the chamber, but apart.  
We'll have no private conference. Welcome to  
England !

*Enter FERIA.*

FERIA. Fair island star !

ELIZABETH. I shine ! What else, Sir Count ?

FERIA. As far as France, and into Philip's heart.  
My King would know if you be fairly served,  
And lodged, and treated.

ELIZABETH. You see the lodging, sir,

I am well-served, and am in everything  
Most loyal and most grateful to the Queen.

FERIA. You should be grateful to my master,  
too.

He spoke of this ; and unto him you owe  
That Mary hath acknowledged you her heir.

ELIZABETH. No, not to her nor him ; but to the  
people,

Who know my right, and love me, as I love  
The people ! whom God aid !

FERIA. You will be Queen,  
And, were I Philip—

ELIZABETH. Wherefore pause you—what ?

FERIA. Nay, but I speak from mine own self, not  
him ;

Your royal sister cannot last ; your hand  
Will be much coveted ! What a delicate one !  
Our Spanish ladies have none such—and there,  
Were you in Spain, this fine fair gossamer gold—  
Like sun-gilt breathings on a frosty dawn—  
That hovers round your shoulder—

ELIZABETH. Is it so fine ?  
Troth, some have said so.

FERIA. —would be deemed a miracle.

ELIZABETH. Your Philip hath gold hair and golden  
beard ;  
There must be ladies many with hair like mine.

FERIA. Some few of Gothic blood have golden  
hair,

But none like yours.

ELIZABETH. I am happy you approve it.

FERIA. But as to Philip and your Grace—  
consider,—

If such a one as you should match with Spain,  
What hinders but that Spain and England join'd,  
Should make the mightiest empire earth has known.  
Spain would be England on her seas, and England  
Mistress of the Indies.

ELIZABETH. It may chance, that England  
Will be the Mistress of the Indies yet,  
Without the help of Spain.

FERIA. Impossible ;  
Except you put Spain down.  
Wide of the mark ev'n for a madman's dream.

ELIZABETH. Perhaps ; but we have seamen.  
Count de Feria,  
I take it that the King hath spoken to you ;  
But is Don Carlos such a goodly match ?

FERIA. Don Carlos, Madam, is but twelve years old.

ELIZABETH. Ay, tell the King that I will muse  
upon it ;  
He is my good friend, and I would keep him so ;  
But—he would have me Catholic of Rome,  
And that I scarce can be ; and, sir, till now



My sister's marriage, and my father's marriages,  
Make me full fain to live and die a maid.  
But I am much beholden to your King.  
Have you aught else to tell me?

FERIA. Nothing, Madam,  
Save that methought I gather'd from the Queen  
That she would see your Grace before she—died.

ELIZABETH. God's death! and wherefore spake  
you not before?

We dally with our lazy moments here,  
And hers are number'd. Horses there, without!  
I am much beholden to the King, your master.  
Why did you keep me prating? Horses, there!

[*Exit* ELIZABETH, *etc.*

FERIA. So from a clear sky falls the thunderbolt!  
Don Carlos? Madam, if you marry Philip,  
Then I and he will snaffle your 'God's death,'  
And break your paces in, and make you tame;  
God's death, forsooth—you do not know King Philip.  
[*Exit.*

SCENE IV.—LONDON. BEFORE THE PALACE.

*A light burning within. VOICES of the night passing.*

FIRST. Is not yon light in the Queen's chamber?

SECOND. Ay,

They say she's dying.

FIRST.                                So is Cardinal Pole.  
May the great angels join their wings, and make  
Down for their heads to heaven !

SECOND. Amen. Come on.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## Two Others.

FIRST. There's the Queen's light. I hear she cannot live.

SECOND. God curse her and her Legate ! Gardiner  
burns

Already ; but to pay them full in kind,  
The hottest hold in all the devil's den  
Were but a sort of winter ; sir, in Guernsey,  
I watch'd a woman burn ; and in her agony  
The mother came upon her—a child was born—  
And, sir, they hurl'd it back into the fire,  
That, being but baptized in fire, the babe  
Might be in fire for ever. Ah, good neighbour,  
There should be something fierier than fire  
To yield them their deserts.

FIRST. Amen to all  
Your wish, and further.

A THIRD VOICE. Deserts ! Amen to what ? Whose deserts ? Yours ? You have a gold ring on your finger, and soft raiment about your body ; and is not the woman up yonder sleeping after all she has

done, in peace and quietness, on a soft bed, in a closed room, with light, fire, physic, tendance ; and I have seen the true men of Christ lying famine-dead by scores, and under no ceiling but the cloud that wept on them, not for them.

FIRST. Friend, tho' so late, it is not safe to preach. You had best go home. What are you ?

THIRD. What am I ? One who cries continually with sweat and tears to the Lord God that it would please Him out of His infinite love to break down all kingship and queenship, all priesthood and prelacy ; to cancel and abolish all bonds of human allegiance, all the magistracy, all the nobles, and all the wealthy ; and to send us again, according to His promise, the one King, the Christ, and all things in common, as in the day of the first church, when Christ Jesus was King.

FIRST. If ever I heard a madman,—let's away !  
Why, you long-winded—— Sir, you go beyond me.  
I pride myself on being moderate.  
Good night ! Go home. Besides, you curse so  
loud,

The watch will hear you. Get you home at once.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE V.—LONDON. A ROOM IN THE PALACE.

*A Gallery on one side. The moonlight streaming through a range of windows on the wall opposite. MARY, LADY CLARENCE, LADY MAGDALEN DACRES, ALICE. QUEEN pacing the Gallery. A writing-table in front. QUEEN comes to the table and writes and goes again, pacing the Gallery.*

LADY CLARENCE. Mine eyes are dim : what hath she written ? read.

ALICE. 'I am dying, Philip ; come to me.'

LADY MAGDALEN. There—up and down, poor lady, up and down.

ALICE. And how her shadow crosses one by one

The moonlight casements pattern'd on the wall,  
Following her like her sorrow. She turns again.

*[QUEEN sits and writes, and goes again.*

LADY CLARENCE. What hath she written now ?

ALICE. Nothing ; but 'come, come, come,' and all awry,

And blotted by her tears. This cannot last.

*[QUEEN returns.*

MARY. I whistle to the bird has broken cage,  
And all in vain. *[Sitting down.*  
Calais gone—Guisnes gone, too—and Philip gone !

LADY CLARENCE. Dear Madam, Philip is but at  
the wars ;

I cannot doubt but that he comes again ;

And he is with you in a measure still.

I never look'd upon so fair a likeness

As your great King in armour there, his hand

Upon his helmet.

*[Pointing to the portrait of Philip on the wall.]*

MARY. Doth he not look noble ?

I had heard of him in battle over seas,

And I would have my warrior all in arms.

He said it was not courtly to stand helmeted

Before the Queen. He had his gracious moment,

Altho' you'll not believe me. How he smiles

As if he loved me yet !

LADY CLARENCE. And so he does.

MARY. He never loved me—nay, he could not  
love me.

It was his father's policy against France.

I am eleven years older than he,

Poor boy !

*[Weeps.]*

ALICE. That was a lusty boy of twenty-seven ;

*[Aside.]*

Poor enough in God's grace !

MARY.

—And all in vain !

The Queen of Scots is married to the Dauphin,

And Charles, the lord of this low world, is gone ;

And all his wars and wisdoms past away ;  
And in a moment I shall follow him.

LADY CLARENCE. Nay, dearest Lady, see your  
good physician.

MARY. Drugs—but he knows they cannot help  
me—says

That rest is all—tells me I must not think—

That I must rest—I shall rest by and by.

Catch the wild cat, cage him, and when he springs

And maims himself against the bars, say 'rest':

Why, you must kill him if you would have him rest—

Dead or alive you cannot make him happy.

LADY CLARENCE. Your Majesty has lived so pure  
a life,

And done such mighty things by Holy Church,

I trust that God will make you happy yet.

MARY. What is the strange thing happiness? Sit  
down here :

Tell me thine happiest hour.

LADY CLARENCE. I will, if that  
May make your Grace forget yourself a little.  
There runs a shallow brook across our field  
For twenty miles, where the black crow flies five,  
And doth so bound and babble all the way  
As if itself were happy. It was May-time,  
And I was walking with the man I loved.  
I loved him, but I thought I was not loved.

And both were silent, letting the wild brook  
Speak for us—till he stoop'd and gather'd one  
From out a bed of thick forget-me-nots,  
Look'd hard and sweet at me, and gave it me.  
I took it, tho' I did not know I took it,  
And put it in my bosom, and all at once  
I felt his arms about me, and his lips—

MARY. O God ! I have been too slack, too slack.  
There are Hot Gospellers even among our guards—  
Nobles we dared not touch. We have but burnt  
The heretic priest, workmen, and women and children.  
Wet, famine, ague, fever, storm, wreck, wrath,—  
We have so play'd the coward ; but by God's grace,  
We'll follow Philip's leading, and set up  
The Holy Office here—garner the wheat,  
And burn the tares with unquenchable fire !  
Burn !—

Fie, what a savour ! tell the cooks to close  
The doors of all the offices below.

Latimer !

Sir, we are private with our women here—  
Ever a rough, blunt, and uncourtly fellow—  
Thou light a torch that never will go out !  
'Tis out—mine flames. Women, the Holy Father  
Has ta'en the legateship from our cousin Pole—  
Was that well done ? and poor Pole pines of it,  
As I do, to the death. I am but a woman,

I have no power.—Ah, weak and meek old man,  
Seven-fold dishonour'd even in the sight  
Of thine own sectaries—No, no. No pardon!—  
Why that was false : there is the right hand still  
Beckons me hence.

Sir, you were burnt for heresy, not for treason,  
Remember that ! 'twas I and Bonner did it,  
And Pole ; we are three to one—Have you found  
mercy there,  
Grant it me here : and see, he smiles and goes,  
Gentle as in life.

ALICE. Madam, who goes ? King Philip ?

MARY. No, Philip comes and goes, but never  
goes.

Women, when I am dead,  
Open my heart, and there you will find written  
Two names, Philip and Calais ; open his,—  
So that he have one,—  
You will find Philip only, policy, policy,—  
Ay, worse than that—not one hour true to me !  
Foul maggots crawling in a fester'd vice !  
Adulterous to the very heart of Hell.  
Hast thou a knife ?

ALICE. Ay, Madam, but o' God's mercy—

MARY. Fool, think'st thou I would peril mine own  
soul

By slaughter of the body ? I could not, girl,



Not this way—callous with a constant stripe,  
Unwoundable. The knife!

ALICE. Take heed, take heed!  
The blade is keen as death.

MARY. This Philip shall not  
Stare in upon me in my haggardness;  
Old, miserable, diseased,  
Incapable of children. Come thou down.

[*Cuts out the picture and throws it down.*]

Lie there. (*Wails*) O God, I have kill'd my Philip!

ALICE. No,  
Madam, you have but cut the canvas out;  
We can replace it.

MARY. All is well then; rest—  
I will to rest; he said, I must have rest.

[*Cries of 'ELIZABETH' in the street.*]

A cry! What's that? Elizabeth? revolt?  
A new Northumberland, another Wyatt?  
I'll fight it on the threshold of the grave.

LADY CLARENCE. Madam, your royal sister comes  
to see you.

MARY. I will not see her.  
Who knows if Boleyn's daughter be my sister?  
I will see none except the priest. Your arm.

[*To* LADY CLARENCE.

O Saint of Aragon, with that sweet worn smile  
Among thy patient wrinkles—Help me hence. [*Exeunt.*]

*The PRIEST passes. Enter ELIZABETH and SIR  
WILLIAM CECIL.*

ELIZABETH. Good counsel yours—

No one in waiting? still,

As if the chamberlain were Death himself!

The room she sleeps in—is not this the way?

No, that way there are voices. Am I too late?

Cecil . . . God guide me lest I lose the way.

*[Exit ELIZABETH.]*

CECIL. Many points weather'd, many perilous  
ones,

At last a harbour opens; but therein

Sunk rocks—they need fine steering—much it is

To be nor mad, nor bigot—have a mind—

Nor let Priests' talk, or dream of worlds to be,

Miscolour things about her—sudden touches

For him, or him—sunk rocks; no passionate faith—

But—if let be—balance and compromise;

Brave, wary, sane to the heart of her—a Tudor

School'd by the shadow of death—a Boleyn, too,

Glancing across the Tudor—not so well.

*Enter ALICE.*

How is the good Queen now?

ALICE.

Away from Philip.

Back in her childhood—prattling to her mother  
Of her betrothal to the Emperor Charles,  
And childlike-jealous of him again—and once  
She thank'd her father sweetly for his book  
Against that godless German. Ah, those days  
Were happy. It was never merry world  
In England, since the Bible came among us.

CECIL. And who says that ?

ALICE. It is a saying among the Catholics.

CECIL. It never will be merry world in England,  
Till all men have their Bible, rich and poor.

ALICE. The Queen is dying, or you dare not  
say it.

*Enter ELIZABETH.*

ELIZABETH. The Queen is dead.

CECIL. Then here she stands ! my homage.

ELIZABETH. She knew me, and acknowledged me  
her heir,

Pray'd me to pay her debts, and keep the Faith ;

Then claspt the cross, and pass'd away in peace.

I left her lying still and beautiful,

More beautiful than in life. Why would you vex  
yourself,

Poor sister ? Sir, I swear I have no heart

To be your Queen. To reign is restless fence,

Tierce, quart, and trickery. Peace is with the dead.

Her life was winter, for her spring was nipt :  
And she loved much : pray God she be forgiven.

CECIL. Peace with the dead, who never were at  
peace !

Yet she loved one so much—I needs must say—  
That never English monarch dying left  
England so little.

ELIZABETH. But with Cecil's aid  
And others, if our person be secured  
From traitor stabs—we will make England great.

*Enter* PAGET, *and other* LORDS OF THE COUNCIL,  
SIR RALPH BAGENHALL, *etc.*

LORDS. God save Elizabeth, the Queen of Eng-  
land !

BAGENHALL. God save the Crown ! the Papacy  
is no more.

PAGET (*aside*). Are we so sure of that ?

ACCLAMATION. God save the Queen !

END OF QUEEN MARY.

HAROLD:

A DRAMA.



TO HIS EXCELLENCY  
THE RIGHT HON. LORD LYTTON,  
VICEROY AND GOVERNOR-GENERAL OF INDIA.

MY DEAR LORD LYTTON,—After old-world records—such as the Bayeux tapestry and the Roman de Rou,—Edward Freeman's History of the Norman Conquest, and your father's Historical Romance treating of the same times, have been mainly helpful to me in writing this Drama. Your father dedicated his 'Harold' to my father's brother ; allow me to dedicate my 'Harold' to yourself.

A. TENNYSON.





## SHOW-DAY AT BATTLE ABBEY, 1876.

A GARDEN here—May breath and bloom of spring—  
The cuckoo yonder from an English elm  
Crying ‘with my false egg I overwhelm  
The native nest :’ and fancy hears the ring  
Of harness, and that deathful arrow sing,  
And Saxon battleaxe clang on Norman helm.  
Here rose the dragon-banner of our realm :  
Here fought, here fell, our Norman-slander’d king.  
O Garden blossoming out of English blood !  
O strange hate-healer Time ! We stroll and stare  
Where might made right eight hundred years ago ;  
Might, right ? ay good, so all things make for good—  
But he and he, if soul be soul, are where  
Each stands full face with all he did below.



# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING EDWARD THE CONFESSOR.

STIGAND, *created Archbishop of Canterbury by the Antipope Benedict.*

ALDRED, *Archbishop of York.*

THE NORMAN BISHOP OF LONDON.

HAROLD, *Earl of Wessex, afterwards King of England*

TOSTIG, *Earl of Northumbria*

GURTH, *Earl of East Anglia*

LEOFWIN, *Earl of Kent and Essex*

WULFNOTH

COUNT WILLIAM OF NORMANDY.

WILLIAM RUFUS.

WILLIAM MALET, *a Norman Noble.*<sup>1</sup>

EDWIN, *Earl of Mercia*

MORCAR, *Earl of Northumbria after Tostig*

GAMEL, *a Northumbrian Thane.*

GUY, *Count of Ponthieu.*

ROLF, *a Ponthieu Fisherman.*

HUGH MARGOT, *a Norman Monk.*

OSGOD and ATHELRIC, *Canons from Waltham.*

THE QUEEN, *Edward the Confessor's Wife, Daughter of Godwin.*

ALDWYTH, *Daughter of Alfgar and Widow of Griffyth, King of Wales.*

EDITH, *Ward of King Edward.*

Courtiers, Earls and Thanes, Men-at-Arms, Canons of Waltham, Fishermen, etc.

} Sons of  
Godwin.

} Sons of Alfgar of  
Mercia.

<sup>1</sup> . . . quidam partim Normannus et Anglus  
Compater Heraldi. (*Guy of Amiens*, 587.)



# HAROLD.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—LONDON. THE KING'S PALACE.

*(A comet seen through the open window.)*

ALDWYTH, GAMEL, COURTIER *talking together.*

FIRST COURTIER. Lo ! there once more—this is  
the seventh night !

Yon grimly-glaring, treble-brandish'd scourge  
Of England !

SECOND COURTIER. Horrible !

FIRST COURTIER. Look you, there's a star  
That dances in it as mad with agony !

THIRD COURTIER. Ay, like a spirit in Hell who  
skips and flies  
To right and left, and cannot scape the flame.

SECOND COURTIER. Steam'd upward from the  
undescendable  
Abysm.

FIRST COURTIER. Or floated downward from the  
throne  
Of God Almighty.

ALDWYTH. Gamel, son of Orm,  
What thinkest thou this means?

GAMEL. War, my dear lady!

ALDWYTH. Doth this affright thee?

GAMEL. Mightily, my dear lady!

ALDWYTH. Stand by me then, and look upon my  
face,  
Not on the comet.

*Enter MORCAR.*

Brother! why so pale?

MORCAR. It glares in heaven, it flares upon the  
Thames,  
The people are as thick as bees below,  
They hum like bees,—they cannot speak—for awe;  
Look to the skies, then to the river, strike  
Their hearts, and hold their babies up to it.  
I think that they would Molochize them too,  
To have the heavens clear.

ALDWYTH. They fright not me.

*Enter LEOFWIN, after him GURTH.*

Ask thou Lord Leofwin what he thinks of this!

MORCAR. Lord Leofwin, dost thou believe, that  
these

Three rods of blood-red fire up yonder mean  
The doom of England and the wrath of Heaven?

BISHOP OF LONDON (*passing*). Did ye not cast  
with bestial violence

Our holy Norman bishops down from all  
Their thrones in England? I alone remain.  
Why should not Heaven be wroth?

LEOFWIN. With us, or thee?

BISHOP OF LONDON. Did ye not outlaw your  
archbishop Robert,  
Robert of Jumiéges—well-nigh murder him too?  
Is there no reason for the wrath of Heaven?

LEOFWIN. Why then the wrath of Heaven hath  
three tails,  
The devil only one. [*Exit* BISHOP OF LONDON.

*Enter* ARCHBISHOP STIGAND.

Ask *our* Archbishop.

Stigand should know the purposes of Heaven.

STIGAND. Not I. I cannot read the face of  
heaven;

Perhaps our vines will grow the better for it.

LEOFWIN (*laughing*). He can but read the king's  
face on his coins.

STIGAND. Ay, ay, young lord, *there* the king's face  
is power.

GURTH. O father, mock not at a public fear,  
But tell us, is this pendent hell in heaven  
A harm to England?

STIGAND. Ask it of King Edward!  
And he may tell thee, *I* am a harm to England.  
Old uncanonical Stigand—ask of *me*  
Who had my pallium from an Antipope!  
Not he the man—for in our windy world  
What's up is faith, what's down is heresy.  
Our friends, the Normans, help to shake his chair.  
I have a Norman fever on me, son,  
And cannot answer sanely . . . What it means?  
Ask our broad Earl.

[*Pointing to HAROLD, who enters.*

HAROLD (*seeing* GAMEL). Hail, Gamel, son of Orm!  
Albeit no rolling stone, my good friend Gamel,  
Thou hast rounded since we met. Thy life at home  
Is easier than mine here. Look! am I not  
Work-wan, flesh-fallen?

GAMEL. Art thou sick, good Earl?

HAROLD. Sick as an autumn swallow for a voyage,  
Sick for an idle week of hawk and hound  
Beyond the seas—a change! When camest thou  
hither?

GAMEL. To-day, good Earl.



HAROLD. Is the North quiet, Gamel?

GAMEL. Nay, there be murmurs, for thy brother  
breaks us

With over-taxing—quiet, ay, as yet—

Nothing as yet.

HAROLD. Stand by him, mine old friend,  
Thou art a great voice in Northumberland!  
Advise him: speak him sweetly, he will hear thee.  
He is passionate but honest. Stand thou by him!  
More talk of this to-morrow, if yon weird sign  
Not blast us in our dreams.—Well, father Stigand—

[*To STIGAND, who advances to him.*

STIGAND (*pointing to the comet*). War there, my  
son? is that the doom of England?

HAROLD. Why not the doom of all the world as  
well?

For all the world sees it as well as England.  
These meteors came and went before our day,  
Not harming any: it threatens us no more  
Than French or Norman. War? the worst that  
follows

Things that seem jerk'd out of the common rut  
Of Nature is the hot religious fool,  
Who, seeing war in heaven, for heaven's credit  
Makes it on earth: but look, where Edward draws  
A faint foot hither, leaning upon Tostig.  
He hath learnt to love our Tostig much of late.

LEOFWIN. And *he* hath learnt, despite the tiger in him,

To sleek and supple himself to the king's hand.

GURTH. I trust the kingly touch that cures the evil May serve to charm the tiger out of him.

LEOFWIN. He hath as much of cat as tiger in him. Our Tostig loves the hand and not the man.

HAROLD. Nay ! Better die than lie !

*Enter KING, QUEEN, and TOSTIG.*

EDWARD. In heaven signs !  
Signs upon earth ! signs everywhere ! your Priests  
Gross, worldly, simoniacal, unlearn'd !  
They scarce can read their Psalter ; and your churches  
Uncouth, unhandsome, while in Normanland  
God speaks thro' abler voices, as He dwells  
In statelier shrines. I say not this, as being  
Half Norman-blooded, nor as some have held,  
Because I love the Norman better—no,  
But dreading God's revenge upon this realm  
For narrowness and coldness : and I say it  
For the last time perchance, before I go  
To find the sweet refreshment of the Saints.  
I have lived a life of utter purity :  
I have builded the great church of Holy Peter :  
I have wrought miracles—to God the glory—

And miracles will in my name be wrought  
Hereafter.—I have fought the fight and go—  
I see the flashing of the gates of pearl—  
And it is well with me, tho' some of you  
Have scorn'd me—ay—but after I am gone  
Woe, woe to England! I have had a vision;  
The seven sleepers in the cave at Ephesus  
Have turn'd from right to left.

HAROLD.                                My most dear Master,  
What matters? let them turn from left to right  
And sleep again.

TOSTIG.            Too hardy with thy king !  
A life of prayer and fasting well may see  
Deeper into the mysteries of heaven  
Than thou, good brother.

ALDWYTH (*aside*).            Sees he into thine,  
That thou wouldst have his promise for the crown?

EDWARD. Tostig says true ; my son, thou art too  
hard,  
Not stagger'd by this ominous earth and heaven :  
But heaven and earth are threads of the same loom,  
Play into one another, and weave the web  
That may confound thee yet.

HAROLD. Nay, I trust not,  
For I have served thee long and honestly.

EDWARD. I know it, son ; I am not thankless :  
thou

Hast broken all my foes, lighten'd for me  
The weight of this poor crown, and left me time  
And peace for prayer to gain a better one.  
Twelve years of service ! England loves thee for it.  
Thou art the man to rule her !

ALDWYTH (*aside*).                      So, not Tostig !

HAROLD. And after those twelve years a boon,  
my king,  
Respite, a holiday : thyself wast wont  
To love the chase : thy leave to set my feet  
On board, and hunt and hawk beyond the seas !

EDWARD. What, with this flaming horror overhead ?

HAROLD. Well, when it passes then.

EDWARD.                                      Ay if it pass.  
Go not to Normandy—go not to Normandy.

HAROLD. And wherefore not, my king, to Nor-  
mandy ?

Is not my brother Wulfnoth hostage there  
For my dead father's loyalty to thee ?  
I pray thee, let me hence and bring him home.

EDWARD. Not thee, my son : some other mes-  
senger.

HAROLD. And why not me, my lord, to Nor-  
mandy ?

Is not the Norman Count thy friend and mine ?

EDWARD. I pray thee, do not go to Normandy.

HAROLD. Because my father drove the Normans out

Of England?—That was many a summer gone—  
Forgotten and forgiven by them and thee.

EDWARD. Harold, I will not yield thee leave to  
go.

HAROLD. Why then to Flanders. I will hawk and  
hunt

In Flanders.

EDWARD. Be there not fair woods and fields  
In England? Wilful, wilful. Go—the Saints  
Pilot and prosper all thy wandering out  
And homeward. Tostig, I am faint again.  
Son Harold, I will in and pray for thee.

[*Exit, leaning on TOSTIG, and followed by*  
STIGAND, MORCAR, *and* COURTIER.

HAROLD. What lies upon the mind of our good  
king

That he should harp this way on Normandy?

QUEEN. Brother, the king is wiser than he seems;  
And Tostig knows it; Tostig loves the king.

HAROLD. And love should know; and—be the  
king so wise,—

Then Tostig too were wiser than he seems.  
I love the man but not his phantasies.

*Re-enter TOSTIG.*

Well, brother,

When didst thou hear from thy Northumbria?

TOSTIG. When did I hear aught but this ‘*When*’  
from thee?

Leave me alone, brother, with my Northumbria :

She is *my* mistress, let *me* look to her !

The King hath made me Earl ; make me not fool !

Nor make the King a fool, who made me Earl !

HAROLD. No, Tostig—lest I make myself a fool  
Who made the King who made thee, make thee  
Earl.

TOSTIG. Why chafe me then? Thou knowest I  
soon go wild.

GURTH. Come, come ! as yet thou art not gone  
so wild

But thou canst hear the best and wisest of us.

HAROLD. So says old Gurth, not I : yet hear !  
thine earldom,

Tostig, hath been a kingdom. Their old crown

Is yet a force among them, a sun set

But leaving light enough for Alfgar’s house

To strike thee down by—nay, this ghastly glare

May heat their fancies.

TOSTIG. My most worthy brother,

Thou art the quietest man in all the world—

Ay, ay and wise in peace and great in war—

Pray God the people choose thee for their king !

But all the powers of the house of Godwin

Are not enfram’d in thee.

HAROLD.                                Thank the Saints, no !  
But thou hast drain'd them shallow by thy tolls,  
And thou art ever here about the King :  
Thine absence well may seem a want of care.  
Cling to their love ; for, now the sons of Godwin  
Sit topmost in the field of England, envy,  
Like the rough bear beneath the tree, good brother,  
Waits till the man let go.

TOSTIG.                      Good counsel truly !  
I heard from my Northumbria yesterday.

HAROLD. How goes it then with thy Northumbria?  
Well?

TOSTIG. And wouldst thou that it went aught else  
than well?

HAROLD. I would it went as well as with mine  
earldom,  
Leofwin's and Gurth's.

TOSTIG.                   Ye govern milder men.

GURTH. We have made them milder by just government.

TOSTIG. Ay, ever give yourselves your own good word.

LEOFWIN. An honest gift, by all the Saints, if  
giver

And taker be but honest ! but they bribe  
Each other, and so often, an honest world  
Will not believe them.

HAROLD. I may tell thee, Tostig,  
I heard from thy Northumberland to-day.

TOSTIG. From spies of thine to spy my nakedness  
In my poor North !

HAROLD. There is a movement there,  
A blind one—nothing yet.

TOSTIG. Crush it at once  
With all the power I have !—I must—I will !—  
Crush it half-born ! Fool still ? or wisdom there,  
My wise head-shaking Harold ?

HAROLD. Make not thou  
The nothing something. Wisdom when in power  
And wisest, should not frown as Power, but smile  
As kindness, watching all, till the true *must*  
Shall make her strike as Power : but when to  
strike—

O Tostig, O dear brother—If they prance,  
Rein in, not lash them, lest they rear and run  
And break both neck and axle.

TOSTIG. Good again !  
Good counsel tho' scarce needed. Pour not water  
In the full vessel running out at top  
To swamp the house.

LEOFWIN. Nor thou be a wild thing  
Out of the waste, to turn and bite the hand  
Would help thee from the trap.

TOSTIG. Thou playest in tune.



LEOFWIN. To the deaf adder thee, that wilt not  
dance

However wisely charm'd.

TOSTIG. No more, no more !

GURTH. I likewise cry 'no more.' Unwholesome  
talk

For Godwin's house ! Leofwin, thou hast a tongue !  
Tostig, thou look'st as thou wouldst spring upon him.  
St. Olaf, not while I am by ! Come, come,  
Join hands, let brethren dwell in unity ;  
Let kith and kin stand close as our shield-wall,  
Who breaks us then ? I say, thou hast a tongue,  
And Tostig is not stout enough to bear it.  
Vex him not, Leofwin.

TOSTIG. No, I am not vext,—

Altho' ye seek to vex me, one and all.  
I have to make report of my good earldom  
To the good king who gave it—not to you—  
Not any of you.—I am not vext at all.

HAROLD. The king? the king is ever at his prayers ;  
In all that handles matter of the state  
I am the king.

TOSTIG. That shalt thou never be  
If I can thwart thee.

HAROLD. Brother, brother !

TOSTIG. Away !

[*Exit* TOSTIG.]

QUEEN. Spite of this grisly star ye three must gall  
Poor Tostig.

LEOFWIN. Tostig, sister, galls himself ;  
He cannot smell a rose but pricks his nose  
Against the thorn, and rails against the rose.

QUEEN. I am the only rose of all the stock  
That never thorn'd him ; Edward loves him, so  
Ye hate him. Harold always hated him.  
Why—how they fought when boys—and, Holy Mary !  
How Harold used to beat him !

HAROLD. Why, boys will fight.  
Leofwin would often fight me, and I beat him.  
Even old Gurth would fight. I had much ado  
To hold mine own against old Gurth. Old Gurth,  
We fought like great states for grave cause ; but  
Tostig—

On a sudden—at a something—for a nothing—  
The boy would fist me hard, and when we fought  
I conquer'd, and he loved me none the less,  
Till thou wouldst get him all apart, and tell him  
That where he was but worsted, he was wrong'd.  
Ah ! thou hast taught the king to spoil him too ;  
Now the spoilt child sways both. Take heed, take  
heed ;

Thou art the Queen ; ye are boy and girl no more :  
Side not with Tostig in any violence,  
Lest thou be sideways guilty of the violence.

QUEEN. Come fall not foul on me. I leave thee,  
brother.

HAROLD. Nay, my good sister—

[*Exeunt* QUEEN, HAROLD, GURTH, and LEOFWIN.

ALDWYTH. Gamel, son of Orm,

What thinkest thou this means? [*Pointing to the comet.*

GAMEL. War, my dear lady,

War, waste, plague, famine, all malignities.

ALDWYTH. It means the fall of Tostig from his  
earldom.

GAMEL. That were too small a matter for a  
comet!

ALDWYTH. It means the lifting of the house of  
Alfgar.

GAMEL. Too small! a comet would not show for  
that!

ALDWYTH. Not small for thee, if thou canst com-  
pass it.

GAMEL. Thy love?

ALDWYTH. As much as I can give thee, man;  
This Tostig is, or like to be, a tyrant;  
Stir up thy people: oust him!

GAMEL. And thy love?

ALDWYTH. As much as thou canst bear.

GAMEL. I can bear all,  
And not be giddy.

ALDWYTH. No more now: to-morrow.

SCENE II.—IN THE GARDEN. THE KING'S  
HOUSE NEAR LONDON. SUNSET.

EDITH. Mad for thy mate, passionate nightin-  
gale . . .

I love thee for it—ay, but stay a moment ;

*He* can but stay a moment : he is going.

I fain would hear him coming ! . . . near me . . . near,

Somewhere—To draw him nearer with a charm

Like thine to thine.

*(Singing.)*

Love is come with a song and a smile,

Welcome Love with a smile and a song :

Love can stay but a little while.

Why cannot he stay ? They call him away :

Ye do him wrong, ye do him wrong ;

Love will stay for a whole life long.

*Enter* HAROLD.

HAROLD. The nightingales in Havering-atte-  
Bower

Sang out their loves so loud, that Edward's prayers  
Were deafen'd and he pray'd them dumb, and thus  
I dumb thee too, my wingless nightingale !

*[Kissing her.]*

EDITH. Thou art my music ! Would their wings  
were mine

To follow thee to Flanders ! Must thou go ?

HAROLD. Not must, but will. It is but for one  
moon.

EDITH. Leaving so many foes in Edward's hall  
To league against thy weal. The Lady Aldwyth  
Was here to-day, and when she touch'd on thee,  
She stammer'd in her hate ; I am sure she hates thee,  
Pants for thy blood.

HAROLD. Well, I have given her cause—  
I fear no woman.

EDITH. Hate not one who felt  
Some pity for thy hater ! I am sure  
Her morning wanted sunlight, she so praised  
The convent and lone life—within the pale—  
Beyond the passion. Nay—she held with Edward,  
At least methought she held with holy Edward,  
That marriage was half sin.

HAROLD. A lesson worth  
Finger and thumb—thus (*snaps his fingers*). And my  
answer to it—

See here—an interwoven H and E !

Take thou this ring ; I will demand his ward  
From Edward when I come again. Ay, would she ?  
She to shut up my blossom in the dark !  
Thou art *my* nun, thy cloister in mine arms.

EDITH (*taking the ring*). Yea, but Earl Tostig—

HAROLD. That's a truer fear!

For if the North take fire, I should be back;

I shall be, soon enough.

EDITH. Ay, but last night

An evil dream that ever came and went—

HAROLD. A gnat that vexed thy pillow! Had I  
been by,

I would have spoil'd his horn. My girl, what was it?

EDITH. Oh! that thou wert not going!

For so methought it was our marriage-morn,

And while we stood together, a dead man

Rose from behind the altar, tore away

My marriage ring, and rent my bridal veil;

And then I turn'd, and saw the church all fill'd

With dead men upright from their graves, and all

The dead men made at thee to murder thee,

But thou didst back thyself against a pillar,

And strike among them with thy battle-axe—

There, what a dream!

HAROLD. Well, well—a dream—no more!

EDITH. Did not Heaven speak to men in dreams  
of old?

HAROLD. Ay—well—of old. I tell thee what, my  
child;

Thou hast misread this merry dream of thine,

Taken the rifted pillars of the wood

For smooth stone columns of the sanctuary,  
The shadows of a hundred fat dead deer  
For dead men's ghosts. True, that the battle-axe  
Was out of place ; it should have been the bow.—  
Come, thou shalt dream no more such dreams ; I  
swear it,

By mine own eyes—and these two sapphires—these  
Twin rubies, that are amulets against all  
The kisses of all kind of womankind  
In Flanders, till the sea shall roll me back  
To tumble at thy feet.

EDITH. That would but shame me,  
Rather than make me vain. The sea may roll  
Sand, shingle, shore-weed, not the living rock  
Which guards the land.

HAROLD. Except it be a soft one,  
And undereaten to the fall. Mine amulet . . .  
This last . . . upon thine eyelids, to shut in  
A happier dream. Sleep, sleep, and thou shalt see  
My grayhounds fleeting like a beam of light,  
And hear my peregrine and her bells in heaven ;  
And other bells on earth, which yet are heaven's ;  
Guess what they be.

EDITH. He cannot guess who knows.  
Farewell, my king.

HAROLD. Not yet, but then—my queen.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter ALDWYTH from the thicket.*

ALDWYTH. The kiss that charms thine eyelids into  
sleep,  
Will hold mine waking. Hate him? I could love  
him  
More, tenfold, than this fearful child can do ;  
Griffyth I hated : why not hate the foe  
Of England? Griffyth when I saw him flee,  
Chased deer-like up his mountains, all the blood  
That should have only pulsed for Griffyth, beat  
For his pursuer. I love him or think I love him.  
If he were King of England, I his queen,  
I might be sure of it. Nay, I do love him.—  
She must be cloister'd somehow, lest the king  
Should yield his ward to Harold's will. What harm?  
She hath but blood enough to live, not love.—  
When Harold goes and Tostig, shall I play  
The craftier Tostig with him? fawn upon him?  
Chime in with all? 'O thou more saint than king !'  
And that were true enough. 'O blessed relics !'  
'O Holy Peter !' If he found me thus,  
Harold might hate me ; he is broad and honest,  
Breathing an easy gladness . . . not like Aldwyth . . .  
For which I strangely love him. Should not England  
Love Aldwyth, if she stay the feuds that part  
The sons of Godwin from the sons of Alfgar



By such a marrying? Courage, noble Aldwyth!  
Let all thy people bless thee!

Our wild Tostig,  
Edward hath made him Earl: he would be king:—  
The dog that snapt the shadow, dropt the bone.—  
I trust he may do well, this Gamel, whom  
I play upon, that he may play the note  
Whereat the dog shall howl and run, and Harold  
Hear the king's music, all alone with him,  
Pronounced his heir of England.  
I see the goal and half the way to it.—  
Peace-lover is our Harold for the sake  
Of England's wholeness—so—to shake the North  
With earthquake and disruption—some division—  
Then fling mine own fair person in the gap  
A sacrifice to Harold, a peace-offering,  
A scape-goat marriage—all the sins of both  
The houses on mine head—then a fair life  
And bless the Queen of England.

MORCAR (*coming from the thicket*). Art thou assured  
By this, that Harold loves but Edith?

ALDWYTH.

Morcar!

Why creep'st thou like a timorous beast of prey  
Out of the bush by night?

MORCAR.

I follow'd thee.

ALDWYTH. Follow my lead, and I will make thee  
earl.

MORCAR. What lead then?

ALDWYTH. Thou shalt flash it secretly  
Among the good Northumbrian folk, that I—  
That Harold loves me—yea, and presently  
That I and Harold are betroth'd—and last—  
Perchance that Harold wrongs me; tho' I would not  
That it should come to that.

MORCAR. I will both flash  
And thunder for thee.

ALDWYTH. I said 'secretly;'  
It is the flash that murders, the poor thunder  
Never harm'd head.

MORCAR. But thunder may bring down  
That which the flash hath stricken.

ALDWYTH. Down with Tostig!  
That first of all.—And when doth Harold go?

MORCAR. To-morrow—first to Bosham, then to  
Flanders.

ALDWYTH. Not to come back till Tostig shall have  
shown  
And redden'd with his people's blood the teeth  
That shall be broken by us—yea, and thou  
Chair'd in his place. Good-night, and dream thyself  
Their chosen Earl. *[Exit ALDWYTH.]*

MORCAR. Earl first, and after that  
Who knows I may not dream myself their king!

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—SEASHORE. PONTHEIU. NIGHT.

HAROLD *and his MEN, wrecked.*

HAROLD. Friends, in that last inhospitable plunge  
Our boat hath burst her ribs ; but ours are whole ;  
I have but bark'd my hands.

ATTENDANT. I dug mine into  
My old fast friend the shore, and clinging thus  
Felt the remorseless outdraught of the deep  
Haul like a great strong fellow at my legs,  
And then I rose and ran. The blast that came  
So suddenly hath fallen as suddenly—  
Put thou the comet and this blast together—

HAROLD. Put thou thyself and mother-wit together.  
Be not a fool !

*Enter FISHERMEN with torches, HAROLD going up to  
one of them, ROLF.*

Wicked sea-will-o'-the-wisp !

Wolf of the shore ! dog, with thy lying lights  
Thou hast betray'd us on these rocks of thine !

ROLF. Ay, but thou liest as loud as the black  
herring-pond behind thee. We be fishermen ; I came  
to see after my nets.

HAROLD. To drag us into them. Fishermen ?  
devils !

Who, while ye fish for men with your false fires,  
Let the great Devil fish for your own souls.

ROLF. Nay then, we be liker the blessed  
Apostles ; *they* were fishers of men, Father Jean says.

HAROLD. I had liefer that the fish had swallowed  
me,

Like Jonah, than have known there were such devils.  
What's to be done ? [*To his MEN—goes apart with them.*]

FISHERMAN. Rolf, what fish did swallow Jonah ?

ROLF. A whale !

FISHERMAN. Then a whale to a whelk we have  
swallowed the King of England. I saw him over  
there. Look thee, Rolf, when I was down in the fever,  
*she* was down with the hunger, and thou didst stand  
by her and give her thy crabs, and set her up again,  
till now, by the patient Saints, she's as crabb'd as ever.

ROLF. And I'll give her my crabs again, when  
thou art down again.

FISHERMAN. I thank thee, Rolf. Run thou to  
Count Guy ; he is hard at hand. Tell him what hath

crept into our creel, and he will fee thee as freely as he will wrench this outlander's ransom out of him—and why not? for what right had he to get himself wrecked on another man's land?

ROLF. Thou art the human-heartedest, Christian-charitiest of all crab-catchers. Share and share alike!

[*Exit.*

HAROLD (*to FISHERMAN*). Fellow, dost thou catch crabs?

FISHERMAN. As few as I may in a wind, and less than I would in a calm. Ay!

HAROLD. I have a mind that thou shalt catch no more.

FISHERMAN. How?

HAROLD. I have a mind to brain thee with mine axe.

FISHERMAN. Ay, do, do, and our great Count-crab will make his nippers meet in thine heart; he'll sweat it out of thee, he'll sweat it out of thee. Look, he's here! He'll speak for himself! Hold thine own, if thou canst!

*Enter GUY, COUNT OF PONTIEU.*

HAROLD. Guy, Count of Ponthieu?

GUY. Harold, Earl of Wessex!

HAROLD. Thy villains with their lying lights have wreck'd us!

GUY. Art thou not Earl of Wessex?

HAROLD. In mine earldom  
A man may hang gold bracelets on a bush,  
And leave them for a year, and coming back  
Find them again.

GUY. Thou art a mighty man  
In thine own earldom !

HAROLD. Were such murderous liars  
In Wessex—if I caught them, they should hang  
Cliff-gibbeted for sea-marks ; our sea-mew  
Winging their only wail !

GUY. Ay, but my men  
Hold that the shipwreckt are accursed of God ;—  
What hinders me to hold with mine own men ?

HAROLD. The Christian manhood of the man who  
reigns !

GUY. Ay, rave thy worst, but in our oubliettes  
Thou shalt or rot or ransom. Hale him hence !

[*To one of his ATTENDANTS.*  
Fly thou to William ; tell him we have Harold.

## SCENE II.—BAYEUX. PALACE.

COUNT WILLIAM *and* WILLIAM MALET.

WILLIAM. We hold our Saxon woodcock in the  
springe,  
But he begins to flutter. As I think

He was thine host in England when I went  
To visit Edward.

MALET.                   Yea, and there, my lord,  
To make allowance for their rougher fashions,  
I found him all a noble host should be.

WILLIAM.   Thou art his friend : thou know'st my  
                claim on England  
Thro' Edward's promise : we have him in the toils.  
And it were well, if thou shouldst let him feel,  
How dense a fold of danger nets him round,  
So that he bristle himself against my will.

MALET.   What would I do, my lord, if I were you ?

WILLIAM.   What wouldst thou do ?

MALET.                   My lord, he is thy guest.

WILLIAM.   Nay, by the splendour of God, no guest  
                of mine.

He came not to see me, had past me by  
To hunt and hawk elsewhere, save for the fate  
Which hunted *him* when that un-Saxon blast,  
And bolts of thunder moulded in high heaven  
To serve the Norman purpose, drave and crack'd  
His boat on Ponthieu beach ; where our friend Guy  
Had wrung his ransom from him by the rack,  
But that I stept between and purchased him,  
Translating his captivity from Guy  
To mine own hearth at Bayeux, where he sits  
My ransom'd prisoner.

MALET. Well, if not with gold,  
With golden deeds and iron strokes that brought  
Thy war with Brittany to a goodlier close  
Than else had been, he paid his ransom back.

WILLIAM. So that henceforth they are not like to  
league  
With Harold against *me*.

MALET. A marvel, how  
He from the liquid sands of Coesnon  
Haled thy shore-swallow'd, armour'd Normans up  
To fight for thee again !

WILLIAM. Perchance against  
Their saver, save thou save him from himself.

MALET. But I should let him home again, my  
lord.

WILLIAM. Simple ! let fly the bird within the hand,  
To catch the bird again within the bush !  
No.

Smooth thou my way, before he clash with me ;  
I want his voice in England for the crown,  
I want thy voice with him to bring him round ;  
And being brave he must be subtly cow'd,  
And being truthful wrought upon to swear  
Vows that he dare not break. England our own  
Thro' Harold's help, he shall be my dear friend  
As well as thine, and thou thyself shalt have  
Large lordship there of lands and territory.



MALET. I knew thy purpose ; he and Wulfnoth  
never

Have met, except in public ; shall they meet  
In private ? I have often talk'd with Wulfnoth,  
And stuff'd the boy with fears that these may act  
On Harold when they meet.

WILLIAM. Then let them meet !

MALET. I can but love this noble, honest Harold.

WILLIAM. Love him ! why not ? thine is a loving  
office,

I have commission'd thee to save the man :  
Help the good ship, showing the sunken rock,  
Or he is wreckt for ever.

*Enter WILLIAM RUFUS.*

WILLIAM RUFUS. Father.

WILLIAM. Well, boy.

WILLIAM RUFUS. They have taken away the toy  
thou gavest me,  
The Norman knight.

WILLIAM. Why, boy ?

WILLIAM RUFUS. Because I broke  
The horse's leg—it was mine own to break ;  
I like to have my toys, and break them too.

WILLIAM. Well, thou shalt have another Norman  
knight !

WILLIAM RUFUS. And may I break his legs?

WILLIAM. Yea,—get thee gone!

WILLIAM RUFUS. I'll tell them I have had my  
way with thee. [Exit.

MALET. I never knew thee check thy will for ought  
Save for the prattling of thy little ones.

WILLIAM. Who shall be kings of England. I  
am heir  
Of England by the promise of her king.

MALET. But there the great Assembly choose  
their king,  
The choice of England is the voice of England.

WILLIAM. I will be king of England by the laws,  
The choice, and voice of England.

MALET. Can that be?

WILLIAM. The voice of any people is the sword  
That guards them, or the sword that beats them down.  
Here comes the would-be what I will be . . . king-  
like . . .

Tho' scarce at ease; for, save our meshes break,  
More kinglike he than like to prove a king.

*Enter HAROLD, musing, with his eyes on the ground.*

He sees me not—and yet he dreams of me.  
Earl, wilt thou fly my falcons this fair day?  
They are of the best, strong-wing'd against the wind.

HAROLD (*looking up suddenly, having caught but the last word*). Which way does it blow?

WILLIAM. Blowing for England, ha?

Not yet. Thou hast not learnt thy quarters here.

The winds so cross and jostle among these towers.

HAROLD. Count of the Normans, thou hast ransom'd us,

Maintain'd, and entertain'd us royally!

WILLIAM. And thou for us hast fought as loyally,  
Which binds us friendship-fast for ever!

HAROLD. Good!

But lest we turn the scale of courtesy

By too much pressure on it, I would fain,

Since thou hast promised Wulfnoth home with us,

Be home again with Wulfnoth.

WILLIAM. Stay—as yet

Thou hast but seen how Norman hands can strike,

But walk'd our Norman field, scarce touch'd or  
tasted

The splendours of our Court.

HAROLD. I am in no mood:

I should be as the shadow of a cloud

Crossing your light.

WILLIAM. Nay, rest a week or two,

And we will fill thee full of Norman sun,

And send thee back among thine island mists

With laughter.

HAROLD. Count, I thank thee, but had rather  
Breathe the free wind from off our Saxon downs,  
Tho' charged with all the wet of all the west.

WILLIAM. Why if thou wilt, so let it be—thou  
shalt.

That were a graceless hospitality  
To chain the free guest to the banquet-board ;  
To-morrow we will ride with thee to Harfleur,  
And see thee shipt, and pray in thy behalf  
For happier homeward winds than that which crack'd  
Thy bark at Ponthieu,—yet to us, in faith,  
A happy one—whereby we came to know  
Thy valour and thy value, noble earl.  
Ay, and perchance a happy one for thee,  
Provided—I will go with thee to-morrow—  
Nay—but there be conditions, easy ones,  
So thou, fair friend, will take them easily.

*Enter PAGE.*

PAGE. My lord, there is a post from over seas  
With news for thee. *[Exit PAGE.*

WILLIAM. Come, Malet, let us hear !

*[Exeunt COUNT WILLIAM and MALET.*

HAROLD. Conditions? What conditions? pay  
him back

His ransom? 'easy'—that were easy—nay—

No money-lover he ! What said the King ?

‘I pray you do not go to Normandy.’

And fate hath blown me hither, bound me too

With bitter obligation to the Count—

Have I not fought it out ? What did he mean ?

There lodged a gleaming grimness in his eyes,

Gave his shorn smile the lie. The walls oppress  
me,

And yon huge keep that hinders half the heaven.

Free air ! free field !

[*Moves to go out. A MAN-AT-ARMS follows him.*

HAROLD (*to the MAN-AT-ARMS*). I need thee not.

Why dost thou follow me ?

MAN-AT-ARMS. I have the Count’s commands to  
follow thee.

HAROLD. What then ? Am I in danger in this  
court ?

MAN-AT-ARMS. I cannot tell. I have the Count’s  
commands.

HAROLD. Stand out of earshot then, and keep me  
still

In eyeshot.

MAN-AT-ARMS. Yea, lord Harold. [*Withdraws.*

HAROLD. And arm’d men

Ever keep watch beside my chamber door,

And if I walk within the lonely wood,

There is an arm’d man ever glides behind !

*Enter MALET.*

Why am I follow'd, haunted, harass'd, watch'd ?

See yonder ! *[Pointing to the MAN-AT-ARMS.*

MALET. 'Tis the good Count's care for thee !  
The Normans love thee not, nor thou the Normans,  
Or—so they deem.

HAROLD. But wherefore is the wind,  
Which way soever the vane-arrow swing,  
Not ever fair for England ? Why but now  
He said (thou heardest him) that I must not hence  
Save on conditions.

MALET. So in truth he said.

HAROLD. Malet, thy mother was an Englishwoman ;  
There somewhere beats an English pulse in thee !

MALET. Well—for my mother's sake I love your  
England,  
But for my father I love Normandy.

HAROLD. Speak for thy mother's sake, and tell  
me true.

MALET. Then for my mother's sake, and England's  
sake  
That suffers in the daily want of thee,  
Obey the Count's conditions, my good friend.

HAROLD. How, Malet, if they be not honourable !

MALET. Seem to obey them.

HAROLD. Better die than lie !

MALET. Choose therefore whether thou wilt have  
thy conscience

White as a maiden's hand, or whether England  
Be shatter'd into fragments.

HAROLD. News from England?

MALET. Morcar and Edwin have stirr'd up the  
Thanes

Against thy brother Tostig's governance ;  
And all the North of Humber is one storm.

HAROLD. I should be there, Malet, I should be  
there !

MALET. And Tostig in his own hall on suspicion  
Hath massacred the Thane that was his guest,  
Gamel, the son of Orm : and there be more  
As villainously slain.

HAROLD. The wolf ! the beast !

Ill news for guests, ha, Malet ! More ? What more ?  
What do they say ? did Edward know of this ?

MALET. They say, his wife was knowing and  
abetting.

HAROLD. They say, his wife !—To marry and  
have no husband

Makes the wife fool. My God, I should be there.  
I'll hack my way to the sea.

MALET. Thou canst not, Harold ;

Our Duke is all between thee and the sea,  
Our Duke is all about thee like a God ;

All passes block'd. Obey him, speak him fair,  
For he is only debonair to those  
That follow where he leads, but stark as death  
To those that cross him.—Look thou, here is Wulf-  
noth !

I leave thee to thy talk with him alone ;  
How wan, poor lad ! how sick and sad for home !

[*Exit* MALET.]

HAROLD (*muttering*). Go not to Normandy—go  
not to Normandy !

*Enter* WULFNOTH.

Poor brother ! still a hostage !

WULFNOTH.

Yea, and I

Shall see the dewy kiss of dawn no more  
Make blush the maiden-white of our tall cliffs,  
Nor mark the sea-bird rouse himself and hover  
Above the windy ripple, and fill the sky  
With free sea-laughter—never—save indeed  
Thou canst make yield this iron-mooded Duke  
To let me go.

HAROLD. Why, brother, so he will ;  
But on conditions. Canst thou guess at them ?

WULFNOTH. Draw nearer,—I was in the corridor,  
I saw him coming with his brother Odo  
The Bayeux bishop, and I hid myself.



HAROLD. They did thee wrong who made thee  
hostage ; thou  
Wast ever fearful.

WULFNOTH. And he spoke—I heard him—  
‘This Harold is not of the royal blood,  
Can have no right to the crown,’ and Odo said,  
‘Thine is the right, for thine the might ; he is here,  
And yonder is thy keep.’

HAROLD. No, Wulfnoth, no.

WULFNOTH. And William laugh’d and swore that  
might was right,  
Far as he knew in this poor world of ours—  
‘Marry, the Saints must go along with us,  
And, brother, we will find a way,’ said he—  
Yea, yea, he would be king of England.

HAROLD. Never !

WULFNOTH. Yea, but thou must not this way  
answer *him*.

HAROLD. Is it not better still to speak the truth ?

WULFNOTH. Not here, or thou wilt never hence  
nor I :

For in the racing toward this golden goal  
He turns not right or left, but tramples flat  
Whatever thwarts him ; hast thou never heard  
His savagery at Alençon,—the town  
Hung out raw hides along their walls, and cried  
‘Work for the tanner.’

HAROLD.                    That had anger'd *me*  
Had I been William.

WULFNOTH.                    Nay, but he had prisoners,  
He tore their eyes out, sliced their hands away,  
And flung them streaming o'er the battlements  
Upon the heads of those who walk'd within—  
O speak him fair, Harold, for thine own sake.

HAROLD. Your Welshman says, 'The Truth  
against the World,'  
Much more the truth against myself.

WULFNOTH.                      Thyself?

But for my sake, oh brother ! oh ! for my sake !

HAROLD. Poor Wulfnoth! do they not entreat thee well?

WULFNOTH. I see the blackness of my dungeon  
loom  
Across their lamps of revel, and beyond  
The merriest murmurs of their banquet clank  
The shackles that will bind me to the wall.

HAROLD. Too fearful still !

WULFNOTH.                      Oh no, no—speak him fair !  
Call it to temporize ; and not to lie ;  
Harold, I do not counsel thee to lie.  
The man that hath to foil a murderous aim  
May, surely, play with words.

HAROLD. Words are the man.  
Not ev'n for thy sake, brother, would I lie.

WULFNOTH. Then for thine Edith ?

HAROLD. There thou prick'st me deep.

WULFNOTH. And for our Mother England ?

HAROLD. Deeper still.

WULFNOTH. And deeper still the deep-down  
oubliette,

Down thirty feet below the smiling day—

In blackness—dogs' food thrown upon thy head.

And over thee the suns arise and set,

And the lark sings, the sweet stars come and go,

And men are at their markets, in their fields,

And woo their loves and have forgotten thee ;

And thou art upright in thy living grave,

Where there is barely room to shift thy side,

And all thine England hath forgotten thee ;

And he our lazy-pious Norman King,

With all his Normans round him once again,

Counts his old beads, and hath forgotten thee.

HAROLD. Thou art of my blood, and so methinks,  
my boy,

Thy fears infect me beyond reason. Peace !

WULFNOTH. And then our fiery Tostig, while thy  
hands

Are palsied here, if his Northumbrians rise

And hurl him from them,—I have heard the Normans

Count upon this confusion—may he not make

A league with William, so to bring him back ?

HAROLD. That lies within the shadow of the  
chance.

WULFNOTH. And like a river in flood thro' a  
burst dam

Descends the ruthless Norman—our good King  
Kneels mumbling some old bone—our helpless folk  
Are wash'd away, wailing, in their own blood—

HAROLD. Wailing ! not warring ? Boy, thou hast  
forgotten

That thou art English.

WULFNOTH. Then our modest women—  
I know the Norman license—thine own Edith—

HAROLD. No more ! I will not hear thee—William  
comes.

WULFNOTH. I dare not well be seen in talk with  
thee.

Make thou not mention that I spake with thee.

*[Moves away to the back of the stage.]*

*Enter WILLIAM, MALET, and OFFICER.*

OFFICER. We have the man that rail'd against thy  
birth.

WILLIAM. Tear out his tongue.

OFFICER. He shall not rail again.

He said that he should see confusion fall

On thee and on thine house.

WILLIAM.                       Tear out his eyes,  
And plunge him into prison.

OFFICER. It shall be done.

[*Exit* OFFICER.]

WILLIAM. Look not amazed, fair earl! Better  
leave undone  
Than do by halves—tongueless and eyeless, prison'd—  
HAROLD. Better methinks have slain the man at  
once!

WILLIAM. We have respect for man's immortal soul,  
We seldom take man's life, except in war ;  
It frights the traitor more to maim and blind.

HAROLD. In mine own land I should have scorn'd  
the man,  
Or lash'd his rascal back, and let him go.

WILLIAM. And let him go? To slander thee again!  
Yet in thine own land in thy father's day  
They blinded my young kinsman, Alfred—ay,  
Some said it was thy father's deed.

HAROLD.                      They lied.

WILLIAM. But thou and he—whom at thy word,  
for thou  
Art known a speaker of the truth, I free  
From this foul charge—

HAROLD.                                Nay, nay, he freed himself  
By oath and compurgation from the charge.  
The king, the lords, the people clear'd him of it.

WILLIAM. But thou and he drove our good Normans out  
From England, and this rankles in us yet.  
Archbishop Robert hardly scaped with life.

HAROLD. Archbishop Robert ! Robert the Archbishop !  
Robert of Jumiéges, he that—

MALET. Quiet ! quiet !

HAROLD. Count ! if there sat within the Norman chair  
A ruler all for England—one who fill'd  
All offices, all bishopricks with English—  
We could not move from Dover to the Humber  
Saving thro' Norman bishopricks—I say  
Ye would applaud that Norman who should drive  
The stranger to the fiends !

WILLIAM. Why, that is reason !  
Warrior thou art, and mighty wise withal !  
Ay, ay, but many among our Norman lords  
Hate thee for this, and press upon me—saying  
God and the sea have given thee to our hands—  
To plunge thee into life-long prison here :—  
Yet I hold out against them, as I may,  
Yea—would hold out, yea, tho' they should revolt—  
For thou hast done the battle in my cause ;  
I am thy fastest friend in Normandy.

HAROLD. I am doubly bound to thee . . . if this  
be so.

WILLIAM. And I would bind thee more, and  
would myself

Be bounden to thee more.

HAROLD. Then let me hence  
With Wulfnoth to King Edward.

WILLIAM. So we will.  
We hear he hath not long to live.

HAROLD. It may be.

WILLIAM. Why then the heir of England, who is  
he ?

HAROLD. The Atheling is nearest to the throne.

WILLIAM. But sickly, slight, half-witted and a  
child,

Will England have him king ?

HAROLD. It may be, no.

WILLIAM. And hath King Edward not pronounced  
his heir ?

HAROLD. Not that I know.

WILLIAM. When he was here in Normandy,  
He loved us and we him, because we found him  
A Norman of the Normans.

HAROLD. So did we.

WILLIAM. A gentle, gracious, pure and saintly man !  
And grateful to the hand that shielded him,  
He promised that if ever he were king

In England, he would give his kingly voice  
To me as his successor. Knowest thou this?

HAROLD. I learn it now.

WILLIAM. Thou knowest I am his cousin,  
And that my wife descends from Alfred?

HAROLD. Ay.

WILLIAM. Who hath a better claim then to the  
crown

So that ye will not crown the Atheling?

HAROLD. None that I know . . . if that but hung  
upon

King Edward's will.

WILLIAM. Wilt *thou* uphold my claim?

MALET (*aside to HAROLD*). Be careful of thine  
answer, my good friend.

WULFNOTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Oh! Harold, for  
my sake and for thine own!

HAROLD. Ay . . . if the king have not revoked  
his promise.

WILLIAM. But hath he done it then?

HAROLD. Not that I know.

WILLIAM. Good, good, and thou wilt help me to  
the crown?

HAROLD. Ay . . . if the Witan will consent to this.

WILLIAM. Thou art the mightiest voice in England,  
man,

Thy voice will lead the Witan—shall I have it?



WULFNOTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Oh! Harold, if thou love thine Edith, ay.

HAROLD. Ay, if—

MALET (*aside to HAROLD*). Thine 'ifs' will sear thine eyes out—ay.

WILLIAM. I ask thee, wilt thou help me to the crown?

And I will make thee my great Earl of Earls,  
Foremost in England and in Normandy;  
Thou shalt be verily king—all but the name—  
For I shall most sojourn in Normandy;  
And thou be my vice-king in England. Speak.

WULFNOTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Ay, brother—for the sake of England—ay.

HAROLD. My lord—

MALET (*aside to HAROLD*). Take heed now.

HAROLD. Ay.

WILLIAM. I am content,

For thou art truthful, and thy word thy bond.

To-morrow will we ride with thee to Harfleur.

[*Exit WILLIAM.*

MALET. Harold, I am thy friend, one life with thee,

And even as I should bless thee saving mine,  
I thank thee now for having saved thyself.

[*Exit MALET.*

HAROLD. For having lost myself to save myself,

Said 'ay' when I meant 'no,' lied like a lad  
That dreads the pendent scourge, said 'ay' for 'no'!  
Ay! No!—he hath not bound me by an oath—  
Is 'ay' an oath? is 'ay' strong as an oath?  
Or is it the same sin to break my word  
As break mine oath? He call'd my word my bond!  
He is a liar who knows I am a liar,  
And makes believe that he believes my word—  
The crime be on his head—not bounden—no.

*[Suddenly doors are flung open, discovering in an inner hall COUNT WILLIAM in his state robes, seated upon his throne, between two BISHOPS, ODO OF BAYEUX being one: in the centre of the hall an ark covered with cloth of gold; and on either side of it the NORMAN BARONS.]*

*Enter a JAILOR before WILLIAM'S throne.*

WILLIAM (*to JAILOR*). Knave, hast thou let thy prisoner scape?

JAILOR. Sir Count,  
He had but one foot, he must have hopt away,  
Yea, some familiar spirit must have help'd him.

WILLIAM. Woe knave to thy familiar and to thee!

Give me thy keys. *[They fall clashing.]*

Nay let them lie. Stand there and wait my will.

[*The JAILOR stands aside.*

WILLIAM (*to HAROLD*). Hast thou such trustless jailors in thy North?

HAROLD. We have few prisoners in mine earldom there,

So less chance for false keepers.

WILLIAM.

We have heard

Of thy just, mild, and equal governance ;

Honour to thee ! thou art perfect in all honour !

Thy naked word thy bond ! confirm it now

Before our gather'd Norman baronage,

For they will not believe thee—as I believe.

[*Descends from his throne and stands by the ark.*

Let all men here bear witness of our bond !

[*Beckons to HAROLD, who advances.*

*Enter MALET behind him.*

Lay thou thy hand upon this golden pall !

Behold the jewel of St. Pancratius

Woven into the gold. Swear thou on this !

HAROLD. What should I swear ? Why should I swear on this ?

WILLIAM (*savagely*). Swear thou to help me to the crown of England.

MALET (*whispering* HAROLD). My friend, thou hast gone too far to palter now.

WULFNOTH (*whispering* HAROLD). Swear thou to-day, to-morrow is thine own.

HAROLD. I swear to help thee to the crown of England . . .

According as King Edward promises.

WILLIAM. Thou must swear absolutely, noble Earl.

MALET (*whispering*). Delay is death to thee, ruin to England.

WULFNOTH (*whispering*). Swear, dearest brother, I beseech thee, swear!

HAROLD (*putting his hand on the jewel*). I swear to help thee to the crown of England.

WILLIAM. Thanks, truthful Earl; I did not doubt thy word,

But that my barons might believe thy word,

And that the Holy Saints of Normandy

When thou art home in England, with thine own,

Might strengthen thee in keeping of thy word,

I made thee swear.—Show him by whom he hath sworn.

[*The two BISHOPS advance, and raise the cloth of gold. The bodies and bones of Saints are seen lying in the ark.*]

The holy bones of all the Canonised

From all the holiest shrines in Normandy!

HAROLD. Horrible! [*They let the cloth fall again.*]

WILLIAM. Ay, for thou hast sworn an oath

Which, if not kept, would make the hard earth rive  
To the very Devil's horns, the bright sky cleave  
To the very feet of God, and send her hosts  
Of injured Saints to scatter sparks of plague  
Thro' all your cities, blast your infants, dash  
The torch of war among your standing corn,  
Dabble your hearths with your own blood.—Enough!  
Thou wilt not break it! I, the Count—the King—  
Thy friend—am grateful for thine honest oath,  
Not coming fiercely like a conqueror, now,  
But softly as a bridegroom to his own.  
For I shall rule according to your laws,  
And make your ever-jarring Earldoms move  
To music and in order—Angle, Jute,  
Dane, Saxon, Norman, help to build a throne  
Out-towering hers of France . . . The wind is fair  
For England now . . . To-night we will be merry.  
To-morrow will I ride with thee to Harfleur.

[*Exeunt WILLIAM and all the NORMAN BARONS, etc.*]

HAROLD. To-night we will be merry—and to-morrow—

Juggler and bastard—bastard—he hates that most—  
William the tanner's bastard! Would he heard me!  
O God, that I were in some wide, waste field  
With nothing but my battle-axe and him  
To spatter his brains! Why let earth rive, gulf in  
These cursed Normans—yea and mine own self.

Cleave heaven, and send thy saints that I may say  
Ev'n to their faces, 'If ye side with William  
Ye are not noble.' How their pointed fingers  
Glared at me! Am I Harold, Harold, son  
Of our great Godwin? Lo! I touch mine arms,  
My limbs—they are not mine—they are a liar's—  
I mean to be a liar—I am not bound—  
Stigand shall give me absolution for it—  
Did the chest move? did it move? I am utter craven!  
O Wulfnoth, Wulfnoth, brother, thou hast betray'd me!

WULFNOTH. Forgive me, brother, I will live here  
and die.

*Enter PAGE.*

PAGE. My lord! the Duke awaits thee at the  
banquet.

HAROLD. Where they eat dead men's flesh, and  
drink their blood.

PAGE. My lord—

HAROLD. I know your Norman cookery is so  
spiced,

It masks all this.

PAGE. My lord! thou art white as death.

HAROLD. With looking on the dead. Am I so  
white?

Thy Duke will seem the darker. Hence, I follow.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—THE KING'S PALACE. LONDON.

KING EDWARD *dying on a couch, and by him standing the*  
QUEEN, HAROLD, ARCHBISHOP STIGAND, GURTH,  
LEOFWIN, ARCHBISHOP ALDRED, ALDWYTH, *and*  
EDITH.

STIGAND. Sleeping or dying there? If this be  
death,

Then our great Council wait to crown thee King—  
Come hither, I have a power ; [To HAROLD.  
They call me near, for I am close to thee  
And England—I, old shrivell'd Stigand, I,  
Dry as an old wood-fungus on a dead tree,  
I have a power !  
See here this little key about my neck !  
There lies a treasure buried down in Ely :  
If e'er the Norman grow too hard for thee,  
Ask me for this at thy most need, son Harold,  
At thy most need—not sooner.

HAROLD.

So I will.

STIGAND. Red gold—a hundred purses—yea, and  
more !

If thou canst make a wholesome use of these  
To chink against the Norman, I do believe  
My old crook'd spine would bud out two young wings  
To fly to heaven straight with.

HAROLD.

Thank thee, father !

Thou art English, Edward too is English now,  
He hath clean repented of his Normanism.

STIGAND. Ay, as the libertine repents who cannot  
Make done undone, when thro' his dying sense  
Shrills 'lost thro' thee.' They have built their castles  
here ;

Our priories are Norman ; the Norman adder  
Hath bitten us ; we are poison'd : our dear England  
Is demi-Norman. He !—

[*Pointing to KING EDWARD, sleeping.*

HAROLD.

I would I were

As holy and as passionless as he !

That I might rest as calmly ! Look at him—  
The rosy face, and long down-silvering beard,  
The brows unwrinkled as a summer mere.—

STIGAND. A summer mere with sudden wreckful  
gusts

From a side-gorge. Passionless ? How he flamed  
When Tostig's anger'd earldom flung him, nay,



He fain had calcined all Northumbria  
To one black ash, but that thy patriot passion  
Siding with our great Council against Tostig,  
Out-passion'd his ! Holy ? ay, ay, forsooth,  
A conscience for his own soul, not his realm ;  
A twilight conscience lighted thro' a chink ;  
Thine by the sun ; nay, by some sun to be,  
When all the world hath learnt to speak the truth,  
And lying were self-murder by that state  
Which was the exception.

HAROLD.                    That sun may God speed !

STIGAND. Come, Harold, shake the cloud off!

HAROLD. Can I, father?

Our Tostig parted cursing me and England ;  
Our sister hates us for his banishment ;  
He hath gone to kindle Norway against England,  
And Wulfnoth is alone in Normandy.  
For when I rode with William down to Harfleur,  
'Wulfnoth is sick,' he said ; 'he cannot follow ;'  
Then with that friendly-fiendly smile of his,  
'We have learnt to love him, let him a little longer  
Remain a hostage for the loyalty  
Of Godwin's house.' As far as touches Wulfnoth  
I that so prized plain word and naked truth  
Have sinn'd against it—all in vain.

LEOFWIN. Good brother,

By all the truths that ever priest hath preach'd,

Of all the lies that ever men have lied,  
Thine is the pardonablest.

HAROLD.                      May be so !

I think it so, I think I am a fool  
To think it can be otherwise than so.

STIGAND. Tut, tut, I have absolved thee : dost  
thou scorn me,  
Because I had my Canterbury pallium,  
From one whom they disposed ?

HAROLD. No, Stigand, no !

STIGAND. Is naked truth actable in true life?  
I have heard a saying of thy father Godwin,  
That, were a man of state nakedly true,  
Men would but take him for the craftier liar.

LEOFWIN. Be men less delicate than the Devil  
himself?

I thought that naked Truth would shame the Devil,  
The Devil is so modest.

GURTH. He never said it !

LEOFWIN. Be thou not stupid-honest, brother  
Gurth !

HAROLD. Better to be a liar's dog, and hold  
My master honest, than believe that lying  
And ruling men are fatal twins that cannot  
Move one without the other. Edward wakes!--  
Dazed—he hath seen a vision.

EDWARD.                    The green tree !

Then a great Angel past along the highest  
Crying 'the doom of England,' and at once  
He stood beside me, in his grasp a sword  
Of lightnings, wherewithal he cleft the tree  
From off the bearing trunk, and hurl'd it from him  
Three fields away, and then he dash'd and drench'd,  
He dyed, he soak'd the trunk with human blood,  
And brought the sunder'd tree again, and set it  
Straight on the trunk, that thus baptized in blood  
Grew ever high and higher, beyond my seeing,  
And shot out sidelong boughs across the deep  
That dropt themselves, and rooted in far isles  
Beyond my seeing : and the great Angel rose  
And past again along the highest crying  
'The doom of England !'—Tostig, raise my head !

[*Falls back senseless.*]

HAROLD (*raising him*). Let Harold serve for  
Tostig !

QUEEN. Harold served  
Tostig so ill, he cannot serve for Tostig !  
Ay, raise his head, for thou hast laid it low !  
The sickness of our saintly king, for whom  
My prayers go up as fast as my tears fall,  
I well believe, hath mainly drawn itself  
From lack of Tostig—thou hast banish'd him.

HAROLD. Nay—but the council, and the king  
himself.

QUEEN. Thou hatest him, hatest him.

HAROLD (*coldly*). Ay—Stigand, unriddle  
This vision, canst thou?

STIGAND. Dotage!

EDWARD (*starting up*). It is finish'd.  
I have built the Lord a house—the Lord hath dwelt  
In darkness. I have built the Lord a house—  
Palms, flowers, pomegranates, golden cherubim  
With twenty-cubit wings from wall to wall—  
I have built the Lord a house—sing, Asaph! clash  
The cymbal, Heman! blow the trumpet, priest!  
Fall, cloud, and fill the house—lo! my two pillars,  
Jachin and Boaz!— [*Seeing HAROLD and GURTH.*  
Harold, Gurth,—where am I?

Where is the charter of our Westminster?

STIGAND. It lies beside thee, king, upon thy bed.

EDWARD. Sign, sign at once—take, sign it, Stigand,  
Aldred!

Sign it, my good son Harold, Gurth, and Leofwin,  
Sign it, my queen!

ALL. We have sign'd it.

EDWARD. It is finish'd!  
The kingliest Abbey in all Christian lands,  
The lordliest, loftiest minster ever built  
To Holy Peter in our English isle!  
Let me be buried there, and all our kings,  
And all our just and wise and holy men

That shall be born hereafter. It is finish'd!

Hast thou had absolution for thine oath? [*To* HAROLD.

HAROLD. Stigand hath given me absolution for it.

EDWARD. Stigand is not canonical enough  
To save thee from the wrath of Norman Saints.

STIGAND. Norman enough! Be there no Saints  
of England

To help us from their brethren yonder?

EDWARD. Prelate,

The Saints are one, but those of Normanland  
Are mightier than our own. Ask it of Aldred.

[*To* HAROLD.

ALDRED. It shall be granted him, my king; for he  
Who vows a vow to strangle his own mother  
Is guiltier keeping this, than breaking it.

EDWARD. O friends, I shall not overlive the day.

STIGAND. Why then the throne is empty. Who  
inherits?

For tho' we be not bound by the king's voice  
In making of a king, yet the king's voice  
Is much toward his making. Who inherits?  
Edgar the Atheling?

EDWARD. No, no, but Harold.

I love him: he hath served me: none but he  
Can rule all England. Yet the curse is on him  
For swearing falsely by those blessed bones;  
He did not mean to keep his vow.

HAROLD. Not mean  
To make our England Norman.

EDWARD. There spake Godwin,  
Who hated all the Normans ; but their Saints  
Have heard thee, Harold.

EDITH. Oh ! my lord, my king !  
He knew not whom he sware by.

EDWARD. Yea, I know  
He knew not, but those heavenly ears have heard,  
Their curse is on him ; wilt thou bring another,  
Edith, upon his head ?

EDITH. No, no, not I.

EDWARD. Why then, thou must not wed him.

HAROLD. Wherefore, wherefore ?

EDWARD. O son, when thou didst tell me of thine  
oath,

I sorrow'd for my random promise given  
To yon fox-lion. I did not dream then  
I should be king.—My son, the Saints are virgins ;  
They love the white rose of virginity,  
The cold, white lily blowing in her cell :  
I have been myself a virgin ; and I sware  
To consecrate my virgin here to heaven—  
The silent, cloister'd, solitary life,  
A life of life-long prayer against the curse  
That lies on thee and England.

HAROLD. No, no, no.

EDWARD. Treble denial of the tongue of flesh,  
Like Peter's when he fell, and thou wilt have  
To wail for it like Peter. O my son !  
Are all oaths to be broken then, all promises  
Made in our agony for help from heaven ?  
Son, there is one who loves thee : and a wife,  
What matters who, so she be serviceable  
In all obedience, as mine own hath been :  
God bless thee, wedded daughter.

[*Laying his hand on the QUEEN'S head.*]

QUEEN. Bless thou too  
That brother whom I love beyond the rest,  
My banish'd Tostig.

EDWARD. All the sweet Saints bless him !  
Spare and forbear him, Harold, if he comes !  
And let him pass unscathed ; he loves me, Harold !  
Be kindly to the Normans left among us,  
Who follow'd me for love ! and dear son, swear  
When thou art king, to see my solemn vow  
Accomplish'd.

HAROLD. Nay, dear lord, for I have sworn  
Not to swear falsely twice.

EDWARD. Thou wilt not swear ?

HAROLD. I cannot.

EDWARD. Then on thee remains the curse,  
Harold, if thou embrace her : and on thee,  
Edith, if thou abide it,—

[*The KING swoons ; EDITH falls and kneels by the couch.*

STIGAND.

He hath swoon'd !

Death ? . . . no, as yet a breath.

HAROLD.

Look up ! look up !

Edith !

ALDRED. Confuse her not ; she hath begun  
Her life-long prayer for thee.

ALDWYTH.

O noble Harold,

I would thou couldst have sworn.

HAROLD.

For thine own pleasure ?

ALDWYTH. No, but to please our dying king, and  
those

Who make thy good their own—all England, Earl.

ALDRED. I would thou couldst have sworn. Our  
holy king

Hath given his virgin lamb to Holy Church  
To save thee from the curse.

HAROLD.

Alas ! poor man,

*His* promise brought it on me.

ALDRED.

O good son !

That knowledge made him all the carefuller  
To find a means whereby the curse might glance  
From thee and England.

HAROLD.

Father, we so loved—

ALDRED. The more the love, the mightier is the  
prayer ;

The more the love, the more acceptable



The sacrifice of both your loves to heaven.  
No sacrifice to heaven, no help from heaven ;  
That runs thro' all the faiths of all the world.  
And sacrifice there must be, for the king  
Is holy, and hath talk'd with God, and seen  
A shadowing horror ; there are signs in heaven—

HAROLD. Your comet came and went.

ALDRED. And signs on earth !

Knowest thou Senlac hill ?

HAROLD. I know all Sussex ;

A good entrenchment for a perilous hour !

ALDRED. Pray God that come not suddenly !

There is one

Who passing by that hill three nights ago—

He shook so that he scarce could out with it—

Heard, heard—

HAROLD. The wind in his hair ?

ALDRED. A ghostly horn

Blowing continually, and faint battle-hymns,

And cries, and clashes, and the groans of men ;

And dreadful shadows strove upon the hill,

And dreadful lights crept up from out the marsh—

Corpse-candles gliding over nameless graves—

HAROLD. At Senlac ?

ALDRED. Senlac.

EDWARD (*waking*). Senlac ! Sanguelac,  
The Lake of Blood !

STIGAND.                    This lightning before death  
Plays on the word,—and Normanizes too !

HAROLD.    Hush, father, hush !

EDWARD.                    Thou uncanonical fool,  
Wilt *thou* play with the thunder ?    North and South  
Thunder together, showers of blood are blown  
Before a never-ending blast, and hiss  
Against the blaze they cannot quench—a lake,  
A sea of blood—we are drown'd in blood—for God  
Has fill'd the quiver, and Death has drawn the bow—  
Sanguelac ! Sanguelac ! the arrow ! the arrow ! [*Dies.*

STIGAND.    It is the arrow of death in his own heart—  
And our great Council wait to crown thee King.

SCENE II.—IN THE GARDEN.    THE KING'S  
HOUSE NEAR LONDON.

EDITH.    Crown'd, crown'd and lost, crown'd King  
—and lost to me !

(*Singing.*)

Two young lovers in winter weather,  
None to guide them,  
Walk'd at night on the misty heather ;  
Night, as black as a raven's feather ;  
Both were lost and found together,  
None beside them.

That is the burthen of it—lost and found  
Together in the cruel river Swale  
A hundred years ago ; and there's another,

Lost, lost, the light of day,

To which the lover answers lovingly

‘I am beside thee.’

Lost, lost, we have lost the way.

‘Love, I will guide thee.’

Whither, O whither ? into the river,

Where we two may be lost together,

And lost for ever ? ‘Oh ! never, oh ! never,

Tho’ we be lost and be found together.’

Some think they loved within the pale forbidden  
By Holy Church : but who shall say ? the truth  
Was lost in that fierce North, where *they* were lost,  
Where all good things are lost, where Tostig lost  
The good hearts of his people. It is Harold !

*Enter* HAROLD.

Harold the King !

HAROLD.                   Call me not King, but Harold.

EDITH.   Nay, thou art King !

HAROLD.                   Thine, thine, or King or churl !  
My girl, thou hast been weeping : turn not thou

Thy face away, but rather let me be  
King of the moment to thee, and command  
That kiss my due when subject, which will make  
My kingship kinglier to me than to reign  
King of the world without it.

EDITH. Ask me not,  
Lest I should yield it, and the second curse  
Descend upon thine head, and thou be only  
King of the moment over England.

HAROLD. Edith,  
Tho' somewhat less a king to my true self  
Than ere they crown'd me one, for I have lost  
Somewhat of upright stature thro' mine oath,  
Yet thee I would not lose, and sell not thou  
Our living passion for a dead man's dream ;  
Stigand believed he knew not what he spake.  
Oh God ! I cannot help it, but at times  
They seem to me too narrow, all the faiths  
Of this grown world of ours, whose baby eye  
Saw them sufficient. Fool and wise, I fear  
This curse, and scorn it. But a little light !—  
And on it falls the shadow of the priest ;  
Heaven yield us more ! for better, Woden, all  
Our cancell'd warrior-gods, our grim Walhalla,  
Eternal war, than that the Saints at peace  
The Holiest of our Holiest one should be  
This William's fellow-tricksters ;—better die

Than credit this, for death is death, or else  
Lifts us beyond the lie. Kiss me—thou art not  
A holy sister yet, my girl, to fear  
There might be more than brother in my kiss,  
And more than sister in thine own.

EDITH. I dare not.

HAROLD. Scared by the church—‘Love for a  
whole life long’  
When was that sung?

EDITH. Here to the nightingales.

HAROLD. Their anthems of no church, how sweet  
they are!

Nor kingly priest, nor priestly king to cross  
Their billings ere they nest.

EDITH. They are but of spring,  
They fly the winter change—not so with us—  
No wings to come and go.

HAROLD. But wing’d souls flying  
Beyond all change and in the eternal distance  
To settle on the Truth.

EDITH. They are not so true,  
They change their mates.

HAROLD. Do they? I did not know it.

EDITH. They say thou art to wed the Lady  
Aldwyth.

HAROLD. They say, they say.

EDITH. If this be politic,

And well for thee and England—and for her—  
Care not for me who love thee.

GURTH (*calling*). Harold, Harold!

HAROLD. The voice of Gurth! (*Enter GURTH.*)

Good even, my good brother!

GURTH. Good even, gentle Edith.

EDITH. Good even, Gurth.

GURTH. Ill news hath come! Our hapless brother,  
Tostig—

He, and the giant King of Norway, Harold  
Hardrada—Scotland, Ireland, Iceland, Orkney,  
Are landed North of Humber, and in a field  
So packt with carnage that the dykes and brooks  
Were bridged and damm'd with dead, have overthrown  
Morcar and Edwin.

HAROLD. Well then, we must fight.  
How blows the wind?

GURTH. Against St. Valery  
And William.

HAROLD. Well then, we will to the North.

GURTH. Ay, but worse news: this William sent  
to Rome,  
Swearing thou swarest falsely by his Saints:  
The Pope and that Archdeacon Hildebrand  
His master, heard him, and have sent him back  
A holy gonfanon, and a blessed hair  
Of Peter, and all France, all Burgundy,

Poitou, all Christendom is raised against thee ;  
He hath cursed thee, and all those who fight for thee,  
And given thy realm of England to the bastard.

HAROLD. Ha ! ha !

EDITH. Oh ! laugh not ! . . . Strange and ghastly  
in the gloom  
And shadowing of this double thunder-cloud  
That lours on England—laughter !

HAROLD. No, not strange !  
This was old human laughter in old Rome  
Before a Pope was born, when that which reign'd  
Call'd itself God.—A kindly rendering  
Of 'Render unto Cæsar.' . . . . The Good Shep-  
herd !  
Take this, and render that.

GURTH. They have taken York.

HAROLD. The Lord was God and came as man—  
the Pope  
Is man and comes as God.—York taken ?

GURTH. Yea,  
Tostig hath taken York !

HAROLD. To York then. Edith,  
Hadst thou been braver, I had better braved  
All—but I love thee and thou me—and that  
Remains beyond all chances and all churches,  
And that thou knowest.

EDITH. Ay, but take back thy ring.

It burns my hand—a curse to thee and me.

I dare not wear it.

[*Proffers HAROLD the ring, which he takes.*

HAROLD. But I dare. God with thee !

[*Exeunt HAROLD and GURTH.*

EDITH. The King hath cursed him, if he marry  
me ;

The Pope hath cursed him, marry me or no !

God help me ! I know nothing—can but pray

For Harold—pray, pray, pray—no help but prayer,

A breath that fleets beyond this iron world,

And touches Him that made it.



## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—IN NORTHUMBRIA.

ARCHBISHOP ALDRED, MORCAR, EDWIN, *and* FORCES.

*Enter* HAROLD. *The standard of the golden Dragon of Wessex preceding him.*

HAROLD. What ! are thy people sullen from defeat ?  
Our Wessex dragon flies beyond the Humber,  
No voice to greet it.

EDWIN.                      Let not our great king  
Believe us sullen—only shamed to the quick  
Before the king—as having been so bruised  
By Harold, king of Norway ; but our help  
Is Harold, king of England. Pardon us, thou !  
Our silence is our reverence for the king !

HAROLD. Earl of the Mercians ! if the truth be  
gall,  
Cram me not thou with honey, when our good hive  
Needs every sting to save it.

VOICES.

Aldwyth ! Aldwyth !

HAROLD. Why cry thy people on thy sister's name ?

MORCAR. She hath won upon our people thro' her  
beauty,

And pleasantness among them.

VOICES. Aldwyth, Aldwyth !

HAROLD. They shout as they would have her for  
a queen.

MORCAR. She hath followed with our host, and  
suffer'd all.

HAROLD. What would ye, men ?

VOICE. Our old Northumbrian crown,  
And kings of our own choosing.

HAROLD. Your old crown  
Were little help without our Saxon carles  
Against Hardrada.

VOICE. Little ! we are Danes,  
Who conquer'd what we walk on, our own field.

HAROLD. They have been plotting here ! [*Aside.*

VOICE. He calls us little !

HAROLD. The kingdoms of this world began with  
little,

A hill, a fort, a city—that reach'd a hand  
Down to the field beneath it, 'Be thou mine,  
Then to the next, 'Thou also !' If the field  
Cried out 'I am mine own ;' another hill  
Or fort, or city, took it, and the first  
Fell, and the next became an Empire.

VOICE.

Yet

Thou art but a West Saxon : *we* are Danes !

HAROLD. My mother is a Dane, and I am English ;  
There is a pleasant fable in old books,  
Ye take a stick, and break it ; bind a score  
All in one faggot, snap it over knee,  
Ye cannot.

VOICE. Hear King Harold ! he says true !

HAROLD. Would ye be Norsemen ?

VOICES.

No !

HAROLD.

Or Norman ?

VOICES.

No !

HAROLD. Snap not the faggot-band then.

VOICE.

That is true !

VOICE. Ay, but thou art not kingly, only grandson  
To Wulfnoth, a poor cow-herd.

HAROLD.

This old Wulfnoth

Would take me on his knees and tell me tales  
Of Alfred and of Athelstan the Great  
Who drove you Danes ; and yet he held that Dane,  
Jute, Angle, Saxon, were or should be all  
One England, for this cow-herd, like my father,  
Who shook the Norman scoundrels off the throne,  
Had in him kingly thoughts—a king of men,  
Not made but born, like the great king of all,  
A light among the oxen.

VOICE.

That is true !

VOICE. Ay, and I love him now, for mine own  
father  
Was great, and cobbled.

VOICE. Thou art Tostig's brother,  
Who wastes the land.

HAROLD. This brother comes to save  
Your land from waste ; I saved it once before,  
For when your people banish'd Tostig hence,  
And Edward would have sent a host against you,  
Then I, who loved my brother, bad the king  
Who doted on him, sanction your decree  
Of Tostig's banishment, and choice of Morcar,  
To help the realm from scattering.

VOICE. King ! thy brother,  
If one may dare to speak the truth, was wrong'd.  
Wild was he, born so : but the plots against him  
Had madden'd tamer men.

MORCAR. Thou art one of those  
Who brake into Lord Tostig's treasure-house  
And slew two hundred of his following,  
And now, when Tostig hath come back with power,  
Are frightened back to Tostig.

OLD THANE. Ugh ! Plots and feuds !  
This is my ninetieth birthday. Can ye not  
Be brethren ? Godwin still at feud with Alfgar,  
And Alfgar hates King Harold. Plots and feuds !  
This is my ninetieth birthday !

HAROLD.                                Old man, Harold  
Hates nothing ; not *his* fault, if our two houses  
Be less than brothers.

VOICES. Aldwyth, Harold, Aldwyth !

HAROLD. Again! Morcar! Edwin! What do they mean?

EDWIN. So the good king would deign to lend an  
ear

Not overscornful, we might chance—perchance—  
To guess their meaning.

MORCAR.                      Thine own meaning, Harold,  
To make all England one, to close all feuds,  
Mixing our bloods, that thence a king may rise  
Half-Godwin and half-Alfgar, one to rule  
All England beyond question, beyond quarrel.

HAROLD. Who sow'd this fancy here among the  
people?

MORCAR. Who knows what sows itself among the people?

A goodly flower at times.

HAROLD.                               The Queen of Wales?  
Why, Morcar, it is all but duty in her  
To hate me ; I have heard she hates me.

MORCAR. No!

For I can swear to that, but cannot swear  
That these will follow thee against the Norsemen,  
If thou deny them this.

HAROLD. Morcar and Edwin,  
When will you cease to plot against my house?

EDWIN. The king can scarcely dream that we, who  
know

His prowess in the mountains of the West,  
Should care to plot against him in the North.

MORCAR. Who dares arraign us, king, of such a plot?

HAROLD. Ye heard one witness even now.

MORCAR. The craven!

There is a faction risen again for Tostig,  
Since Tostig came with Norway—fright not love.

HAROLD. Morcar and Edwin, will ye, if I yield,  
Follow against the Norseman?

MORCAR. Surely, surely!

HAROLD. Morcar and Edwin, will ye upon oath,  
Help us against the Norman?

MORCAR. With good will;  
Yea, take the Sacrament upon it, king.

HAROLD. Where is thy sister?

MORCAR. Somewhere hard at hand.  
Call and she comes.

[*One goes out, then enter ALDWYTH.*

HAROLD. I doubt not but thou knowest  
Why thou art summon'd.

ALDWYTH. Why?—I stay with these,  
Lest thy fierce Tostig spy me out alone,  
And flay me all alive.

HAROLD. Canst thou love one  
Who did discrown thine husband, unqueen thee?  
Didst thou not love thine husband?

ALDWYTH. Oh! my lord,  
The nimble, wild, red, wiry, savage king—  
That was, my lord, a match of policy.

HAROLD. Was it?  
I knew him brave: he loved his land: he fain  
Had made her great: his finger on her harp  
(I heard him more than once) had in it Wales,  
Her floods, her woods, her hills: had I been his,  
I had been all Welsh.

ALDWYTH. Oh, ay—all Welsh—and yet  
I saw thee drive him up his hills—and women  
Cling to the conquer'd, if they love, the more;  
If not, they cannot hate the conqueror.  
We never—oh! good Morcar, speak for us,  
His conqueror conquer'd Aldwyth.

HAROLD. Goodly news!

MORCAR. Doubt it not thou! Since Gruffyth's  
head was sent  
To Edward, she hath said it.

HAROLD. I had rather  
She would have loved her husband. Aldwyth, Aldwyth,  
Canst thou love me, thou knowing where I love?

ALDWYTH. I can, my lord, for mine own sake,  
for thine,

For England, for thy poor white doye, who flutters  
Between thee and the porch, but then would find  
Her nest within the cloister, and be still.

HAROLD. Canst thou love one, who cannot love  
again?

ALDWYTH. Full hope have I that love will answer  
love.

HAROLD. Then in the name of the great God, so  
be it!

Come, Aldred, join our hands before the hosts,  
That all may see.

[ALDRED *joins the hands of* HAROLD *and* ALDWYTH  
*and blesses them.*

VOICES. Harold, Harold and Aldwyth!

HAROLD. Set forth our golden Dragon, let him  
flap

The wings that beat down Wales!

Advance our Standard of the Warrior,

Dark among gems and gold; and thou, brave  
banner,

Blaze like a night of fatal stars on those

Who read their doom and die.

Where lie the Norsemen? on the Derwent? ay

At Stamford-bridge.

Morcar, collect thy men; Edwin, my friend—

Thou lingerest.—Gurth,—

Last night King Edward came to me in dreams—



The rosy face and long down-silvering beard—

He told me I should conquer :—

I am no woman to put faith in dreams.

*(To his army.)*

Last night King Edward came to me in dreams,

And told me we should conquer.

VOICES.

Forward ! Forward !

Harold and Holy Cross !

ALDWYTH.

The day is won !

SCENE II.—A PLAIN. BEFORE THE BATTLE OF  
STAMFORD-BRIDGE.

HAROLD *and his* GUARD.

HAROLD. Who is it comes this way ? Tostig ?

*(Enter TOSTIG with a small force.)* O brother,

What art thou doing here ?

TOSTIG.

I am foraging

For Norway's army.

HAROLD.

I could take and slay thee.

Thou art in arms against us.

TOSTIG.

Take and slay me,

For Edward loved me.

HAROLD.

Edward bad me spare thee.

TOSTIG. I hate King Edward, for he join'd with  
thee

To drive me outlaw'd. Take and slay me, I say,  
Or I shall count thee fool.

HAROLD. Take thee, or free thee,  
Free thee or slay thee, Norway will have war ;  
No man would strike with Tostig, save for Norway.  
Thou art nothing in thine England, save for Nor-  
way,  
Who loves not thee but war. What dost thou here,  
Trampling thy mother's bosom into blood ?

TOSTIG. She hath wean'd me from it with such  
bitterness.  
I come for mine own Earldom, my Northumbria ;  
Thou hast given it to the enemy of our house.

HAROLD. Northumbria threw thee off, she will  
not have thee,  
Thou hast misused her : and, O crowning crime !  
Hast murder'd thine own guest, the son of Orm,  
Gamel, at thine own hearth.

TOSTIG. The slow, fat fool !  
He drawl'd and prated so, I smote him suddenly,  
I knew not what I did. He held with Morcar.—  
I hate myself for all things that I do.

HAROLD. And Morcar holds with us. Come  
back with him.  
Know what thou dost ; and we may find for thee,  
So thou be chasten'd by thy banishment,  
Some easier earldom.

TOSTIG.                               What for Norway then?  
He looks for land among us, he and his.

HAROLD.   Seven feet of English land, or something more,  
Seeing he is a giant.

TOSTIG.                               That is noble!  
That sounds of Godwin.

HAROLD.                               Come thou back, and be  
Once more a son of Godwin.

TOSTIG (*turns away*).               O brother, brother,  
O Harold—

HAROLD (*laying his hand on TOSTIG'S shoulder*).

Nay then, come thou back to us!

TOSTIG (*after a pause turning to him*).   Never  
shall any man say that I, that Tostig  
Conjured the mightier Harold from his North  
To do the battle for me here in England,  
Then left him for the meaner! thee!—  
Thou hast no passion for the House of Godwin—  
Thou hast but cared to make thyself a king—  
Thou hast sold me for a cry.—  
Thou gavest thy voice against me in the Council—  
I hate thee, and despise thee, and defy thee.  
Farewell for ever!

[*Exit.*

HAROLD.                               On to Stamford-bridge!

## SCENE III.

AFTER THE BATTLE OF STAMFORD-BRIDGE.

BANQUET.

HAROLD *and* ALDWYTH. GURTH, LEOFWIN, MORCAR,  
EDWIN, *and other* EARLS *and* THANES.

VOICES. Hail! Harold! Aldwyth! hail, bride-  
groom and bride!

ALDWYTH (*talking with* HAROLD). Answer them  
thou!

Is this our marriage-banquet? Would the wines  
Of wedding had been dash'd into the cups  
Of victory, and our marriage and thy glory  
Been drunk together! these poor hands but sew,  
Spin, broider—would that they were man's to have held  
The battle-axe by thee!

HAROLD.                                There *was* a moment  
When being forced aloof from all my guard,  
And striking at Hardrada and his madmen  
I had wish'd for any weapon.

ALDWYTH.                                Why art thou sad?

HAROLD. I have lost the boy who play'd at ball  
with me,  
With whom I fought another fight than this  
Of Stamford-bridge.

ALDWYTH.                    Ay! ay! thy victories  
Over our own poor Wales, when at thy side  
He conquer'd with thee.

HAROLD.                    No—the childish fist  
That cannot strike again.

ALDWYTH.                    Thou art too kindly.  
Why didst thou let so many Norsemen hence?  
Thy fierce forekings had clench'd their pirate hides  
To the bleak church doors, like kites upon a barn.

HAROLD.    Is there so great a need to tell thee  
                 why?

ALDWYTH.    Yea, am I not thy wife?

VOICES.                    Hail, Harold, Aldwyth!  
Bridegroom and bride!

ALDWYTH.    Answer them!                    [*To HAROLD.*

HAROLD (*to all*).                    Earls and Thaness!

Full thanks for your fair greeting of my bride!  
Earls, Thaness, and all our countrymen! the day,  
Our day beside the Derwent will not shine  
Less than a star among the goldenest hours  
Of Alfred, or of Edward his great son,  
Or Athelstan, or English Ironside  
Who fought with Knut, or Knut who coming Dane  
Died English. Every man about his king  
Fought like a king; the king like his own man,  
No better; one for all, and all for one,  
One soul! and therefore have we shatter'd back

The hugest wave from Norseland ever yet  
Surged on us, and our battle-axes broken  
The Raven's wing, and dumb'd his carrion croak  
From the gray sea for ever. Many are gone—  
Drink to the dead who died for us, the living  
Who fought and would have died, but happier lived,  
If happier be to live ; they both have life  
In the large mouth of England, till *her* voice  
Die with the world. Hail—hail !

MORCAR. May all invaders perish like Hardrada !  
All traitors fail like Tostig ! [*All drink but HAROLD.*]

ALDWYTH. Thy cup's full !

HAROLD. I saw the hand of Tostig cover it.  
Our dear, dead, traitor-brother, Tostig, him  
Reverently we buried. Friends, had I been here,  
Without too large self-lauding I must hold  
The sequel had been other than his league  
With Norway, and this battle. Peace be with him !  
He was not of the worst. If there be those  
At banquet in this hall, and hearing me—  
For there be those I fear who prick'd the lion  
To make him spring, that sight of Danish blood  
Might serve an end not English—peace with them  
Likewise, if *they* can be at peace with what  
God gave us to divide us from the wolf !

ALDWYTH (*aside to HAROLD*). Make not our Mor-  
car sullen : it is not wise.

HAROLD. Hail to the living who fought, the dead  
who fell !

VOICES. Hail, hail !

FIRST THANE. How ran that answer which King  
Harold gave

To his dead namesake, when he ask'd for England ?

LEOFWIN. 'Seven feet of English earth, or some-  
thing more,

Seeing he is a giant !'

FIRST THANE. Then for the bastard

Six feet and nothing more !

LEOFWIN. Ay, but belike

'Thou hast not learnt his measure.

FIRST THANE. By St. Edmund

I over-measure him. Sound sleep to the man

Here by dead Norway without dream or dawn !

SECOND THANE. What is he bragging still that he  
will come

To thrust our Harold's throne from under him ?

My nurse would tell me of a molehill crying

To a mountain 'Stand aside and room for me !'

FIRST THANE. Let him come ! let him come.

Here's to him, sink or swim ! *[Drinks.*

SECOND THANE. God sink him !

FIRST THANE. Cannot hands which had the  
strength

To shove that stranded iceberg off our shores,

And send the shatter'd North again to sea,  
Scuttle his cockle-shell? What's Brunanburg  
To Stamford-bridge? a war-crash, and so hard,  
So loud, that, by St. Dunstan, old St. Thor—  
By God, we thought him dead—but our old Thor  
Heard his own thunder again, and woke and came  
Among us again, and mark'd the sons of those  
Who made this Britain England, break the North :

Mark'd how the war-axe swang,  
Heard how the war-horn sang,  
Mark'd how the spear-head sprang,  
Heard how the shield-wall rang,  
Iron on iron clang,  
Anvil on hammer bang—

SECOND THANE. Hammer on anvil, hammer on  
anvil. Old dog,  
Thou art drunk, old dog !

FIRST THANE. Too drunk to fight with thee !

SECOND THANE. Fight thou with thine own double,  
not with me,

Keep that for Norman William !

FIRST THANE. Down with William !

THIRD THANE. The washerwoman's brat !

FOURTH THANE. The tanner's bastard !

FIFTH THANE. The Falaise byblow !



[Enter a THANE, from Pevensey, spatter'd with mud.

HAROLD.                                Ay, but what late guest,  
As haggard as a fast of forty days,  
And caked and plaster'd with a hundred mires,  
Hath stumbled on our cups ?

THANE *from Pevensey.* My lord the King!  
William the Norman, for the wind had changed—

HAROLD. I felt it in the middle of that fierce fight  
At Stamford-bridge. William hath landed, ha ?

THANE *from Pevensey.* Landed at Pevensey—I am  
from Pevensey—

Hath wasted all the land at Pevensey—  
Hath harried mine own cattle—God confound him !  
I have ridden night and day from Pevensey—  
A thousand ships—a hundred thousand men—  
Thousands of horses, like as many lions  
Neighing and roaring as they leapt to land—

HAROLD. How oft in coming hast thou broken bread?

THANE *from Pevensy*. Some thrice, or so.

HAROLD.                         Bring not thy hollowness  
On our full feast.   Famine is fear, were it but  
Of being starved.   Sit down, sit down, and eat,  
And, when again red-blooded, speak again ;

(*Aside.*) The men that guarded England to the South

Were scatter'd to the harvest. . . . No power mine  
To hold their force together. . . . Many are fallen  
At Stamford-bridge . . . the people stupid-sure  
Sleep like their swine . . . in South and North at once  
I could not be.

(*Aloud.*)            Gurth, Leofwin, Morcar, Edwin !  
(*Pointing to the revellers.*) The curse of England !  
                     these are drown'd in wassail,  
And cannot see the world but thro' their wines !  
Leave them ! and thee too, Aldwyth, must I leave—  
Harsh is the news ! hard is our honeymoon !  
Thy pardon. (*Turning round to his ATTENDANTS.*)  
                     Break the banquet up . . . Ye four !  
And thou, my carrier-pigeon of black news,  
Cram thy crop full, but come when thou art call'd.

[*Exit* HAROLD.]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—A TENT ON A MOUND, FROM WHICH CAN  
BE SEEN THE FIELD OF SENLAC.

HAROLD, *sitting*; *by him standing* HUGH MARGOT the  
Monk, GURTH, LEOFWIN,

HAROLD. Refer my cause, my crown to Rome!

. . . The wolf

Mudded the brook and predetermined all.

Monk,

Thou hast said thy say, and had my constant 'No'

For all but instant battle. I hear no more.

MARGOT. Hear me again—for the last time. Arise,  
Scatter thy people home, descend the hill,  
Lay hands of full allegiance in thy Lord's  
And crave his mercy, for the Holy Father  
Hath given this realm of England to the Norman.

HAROLD. Then for the last time, monk, I ask again  
When had the Lateran and the Holy Father  
To do with England's choice of her own king?

MARGOT. Earl, the first Christian Cæsar drew to  
the East

To leave the Pope dominion in the West  
He gave him all the kingdoms of the West.

HAROLD. So!—did he?—Earl—I have a mind to  
play

The William with thine eyesight and thy tongue.  
Earl—ay—thou art but a messenger of William.  
I am weary—go : make me not wroth with thee !

MARGOT. Mock-king, I am the messenger of God,  
His Norman Daniel ! Mene, Mene, Tekel !  
Is thy wrath Hell, that I should spare to cry,  
Yon heaven is wroth with *thee* ? Hear me again !  
Our Saints have moved the Church that moves the  
world,

And all the Heavens and very God : they heard—  
They know King Edward's promise and thine—thine.

HAROLD. Should they not know free England  
crowns herself ?

Not know that he nor I had power to promise ?  
Not know that Edward cancell'd his own promise ?  
And for *my* part therein—Back to that juggler,

[*Rising.*

Tell him the saints are nobler than he dreams,  
Tell him that God is nobler than the Saints,  
And tell him we stand arm'd on Senlac Hill,  
And bide the doom of God.

MARGOT.

Hear it thro' me.

The realm for which thou art forsworn is cursed,  
The babe enwomb'd and at the breast is cursed,  
The corpse thou whelmest with thine earth is cursed,  
The soul who fighteth on thy side is cursed,  
The seed thou sowest in thy field is cursed,  
The steer wherewith thou plowest thy field is cursed,  
The fowl that fleeth o'er thy field is cursed,  
And thou, usurper, liar—

HAROLD.

Out, beast monk !

[*Lifting his hand to strike him.* GURTH stops the blow.

I ever hated monks.

MARGOT.

I am but a voice

Among you : murder, martyr me if ye will—

HAROLD. Thanks, Gurth ! The simple, silent,  
selfless man

Is worth a world of tonguesters. (*To MARGOT.*) Get  
thee gone !

He means the thing he says. See him out safe !

LEOFWIN. He hath blown himself as red as fire  
with curses.

An honest fool ! Follow me, honest fool,  
But if thou blurt thy curse among our folk,  
I know not—I may give that egg-bald head  
The tap that silences.

HAROLD.

See him out safe.

[*Exeunt LEOFWIN and MARGOT.*

GURTH. Thou hast lost thine even temper, brother  
Harold !

HAROLD. Gurth, when I past by Waltham, my  
foundation

For men who serve the neighbour, not themselves,  
I cast me down prone, praying ; and, when I rose,  
They told me that the Holy Rood had lean'd  
And bow'd above me ; whether that which held it  
Had weaken'd, and the Rood itself were bound  
To that necessity which binds us down ;  
Whether it bow'd at all but in their fancy ;  
Or if it bow'd, whether it symbol'd ruin  
Or glory, who shall tell ? but they were sad,  
And somewhat sadden'd me.

GURTH. Yet if a fear,  
Or shadow of a fear, lest the strange Saints  
By whom thou swarest, should have power to balk  
Thy puissance in this fight with him, who made  
And heard thee swear — brother — *I* have not  
sworn—

If the king fall, may not the kingdom fall ?  
But if I fall, I fall, and thou art king ;  
And, if I win, I win, and thou art king ;  
Draw thou to London, there make strength to breast  
Whatever chance, but leave this day to me.

LEOFWIN (*entering*). And waste the land about  
thee as thou goest,

And be thy hand as winter on the field,  
To leave the foe no forage.

HAROLD.

Noble Gurth !

Best son of Godwin ! If I fall, I fall—  
The doom of God ! How should the people fight  
When the king flies ? And, Leofwin, art thou mad ?  
How should the King of England waste the fields  
Of England, his own people ?—No glance yet  
Of the Northumbrian helmet on the heath ?

LEOFWIN. No, but a shoal of wives upon the heath,  
And someone saw thy willy-nilly nun  
Vying a tress against our golden fern.

HAROLD. Vying a tear with our cold dews, a sigh  
With these low-moaning heavens. Let her be fetch'd.  
We have parted from our wife without reproach,  
Tho' we have dived thro' all her practices ;  
And that is well.

LEOFWIN.

I saw her even now :

She hath not left us.

HAROLD.

Nought of Morcar then ?

GURTH. Nor seen, nor heard ; thine, William's or  
his own

As wind blows, or tide flows : belike he watches,  
If this war-storm in one of its rough rolls  
Wash up that old crown of Northumberland.

HAROLD. I married her for Morcar—a .sin  
against

The truth of love. Evil for good, it seems,  
Is oft as childless of the good as evil  
For evil.

LEOFWIN. Good for good hath borne at times  
A bastard false as William.

HAROLD. Ay, if Wisdom  
Pair'd not with Good. But I am somewhat worn,  
A snatch of sleep were like the peace of God.  
Gurth, Leofwin, go once more about the hill—  
What did the dead man call it—Sanguelac,  
The lake of blood?

LEOFWIN. A lake that dips in William  
As well as Harold.

HAROLD. Like enough. I have seen  
The trenches dug, the palisades uprear'd  
And wattled thick with ash and willow-wands;  
Yea, wrought at them myself. Go round once  
more;  
See all be sound and whole. No Norman horse  
Can shatter England, standing shield by shield;  
Tell that again to all.

GURTH. I will, good brother.

HAROLD. Our guardsman hath but toil'd his hand  
and foot,  
I hand, foot, heart and head. Some wine! (*One pours  
wine into a goblet which he hands to HAROLD.*)

Too much!



What? we must use our battle-axe to-day.

Our guardsmen have slept well, since we came in?

LEOFWIN. Ay, slept and snored. Your second-sighted man

That scared the dying conscience of the king,

Misheard their snores for groans. They are up again

And chanting that old song of Brunanburg

Where England conquer'd.

HAROLD. That is well. The Norman,

What is he doing?

LEOFWIN. Praying for Normandy;

Our scouts have heard the tinkle of their bells.

HAROLD. And our old songs are prayers for  
England too!

But by all Saints—

LEOFWIN. Barring the Norman!

HAROLD. Nay,

Were the great trumpet blowing doomsday dawn,

I needs must rest. Call when the Norman moves—

[*Exeunt all, but HAROLD.*

No horse—thousands of horses—our shield wall—

Wall—break it not—break not—break— [Sleeps.

VISION OF EDWARD. Son Harold, I thy king, who  
came before

To tell thee thou shouldst win at Stamford-bridge,

Come yet once more, from where I am at peace,

Because I loved thee in my mortal day,

To tell thee thou shalt die on Senlac hill—  
Sanguelac !

VISION OF WULFNOTH. O brother, from my ghastly  
oubliette  
I send my voice across the narrow seas—  
No more, no more, dear brother, nevermore—  
Sanguelac !

VISION OF TOSTIG. O brother, most unbrotherlike  
to me,  
Thou gavest thy voice against me in my life,  
I give my voice against thee from the grave—  
Sanguelac !

VISION OF NORMAN SAINTS. O hapless Harold !  
King but for an hour !  
Thou swarest falsely by our blessed bones,  
We give our voice against thee out of heaven !  
Sanguelac ! Sanguelac ! The arrow ! the arrow !

HAROLD (*starting up, battle-axe in hand.*) Away !  
My battle-axe against your voices. Peace !  
The king's last word—'the arrow !' I shall die—  
I die for England then, who lived for England—  
What nobler ? men must die.  
I cannot fall into a falser world—  
I have done no man wrong. Tostig, poor brother,  
Art *thou* so anger'd ?  
Fain had I kept thine earldom in thy hands  
Save for thy wild and violent will that wench'd

All hearts of freemen from thee. I could do  
No other than this way advise the king  
Against the race of Godwin. Is it possible  
That mortal men should bear their earthly heats  
Into yon bloodless world, and threaten us thence  
Unschool'd of Death? Thus then thou art revenged—  
I left our England naked to the South  
To meet thee in the North. The Norseman's raid  
Hath helpt the Norman, and the race of Godwin  
Hath ruin'd Godwin. No—our waking thoughts  
Suffer a stormless shipwreck in the pools  
Of sullen slumber, and arise again  
Disjointed : only dreams—where mine own self  
Takes part against myself ! Why ? for a spark  
Of self-disdain born in me when I swear  
Falsely to him, the falser Norman, over  
His gilded ark of mummy-saints, by whom  
I knew not that I swear,—not for myself—  
For England—yet not wholly—

*Enter* EDITH.

Edith, Edith,  
Get thou into thy cloister as the king  
Will'd it : be safe : the perjury-mongering Count  
Hath made too good an use of Holy Church  
To break her close ! There the great God of truth  
Fill all thine hours with peace !—A lying devil

Hath haunted me—mine oath—my wife—I fain  
Had made my marriage not a lie ; I could not :  
Thou art my bride ! and thou in after years  
Praying perchance for this poor soul of mine  
In cold, white cells beneath an icy moon—  
This memory to thee !—and this to England,  
My legacy of war against the Pope  
From child to child, from Pope to Pope, from age to  
age,  
Till the sea wash her level with her shores,  
Or till the Pope be Christ's.

*Enter ALDWYTH.*

ALDWYTH (*to* EDITH). Away from him !

EDITH. I will . . . I have not spoken to the king  
One word ; and one I must. Farewell ! [*Going.*

HAROLD. Not yet.

Stay.

EDITH. To what use ?

HAROLD. The king commands thee, woman !  
(*To* ALDWYTH.)

Have thy two brethren sent their forces in ?

ALDWYTH. Nay, I fear not.

HAROLD. Then there's no force in thee !  
Thou didst possess thyself of Edward's ear  
To part me from the woman that I loved !

Thou didst arouse the fierce Northumbrians !  
Thou hast been false to England and to me !—  
As . . . in some sort . . . I have been false to  
thee.

Leave me. No more—Pardon on both sides—Go !

ALDWYTH. Alas, my lord, I loved thee.

HAROLD (*bitterly*). With a love

Passing thy love for Griffyth ! wherefore now

Obeys my first and last commandment. Go !

ALDWYTH. O Harold ! husband ! Shall we meet  
again ?

HAROLD. After the battle—after the battle. Go.

ALDWYTH. I go. (*Aside.*) That I could stab  
her standing there ! [*Exit ALDWYTH.*

EDITH. Alas, my lord, she loved thee.

HAROLD. Never ! never !

EDITH. I saw it in her eyes !

HAROLD. I see it in thine.

And not on thee—nor England—fall God's doom !

EDITH. On *thee* ? on me. And thou art England !  
Alfred

Was England. Ethelred was nothing. England  
Is but her king, and thou art Harold !

HAROLD. Edith,

The sign in heaven—the sudden blast at sea—  
My fatal oath—the dead Saints—the dark dreams—  
The Pope's Anathema—the Holy Rood

That bow'd to me at Waltham—Edith, if  
I, the last English King of England—

EDITH. No,

First of a line that coming from the people,  
And chosen by the people—

HAROLD. And fighting for  
And dying for the people—

EDITH. Living! living!

HAROLD. Yea so, good cheer! thou art Harold,  
I am Edith!

Look not thus wan!

EDITH. What matters how I look?  
Have we not broken Wales and Norseland? slain,  
Whose life was all one battle, incarnate war,  
Their giant-king, a mightier man-in-arms  
Than William.

HAROLD. Ay, my girl, no tricks in him—  
No bastard he! when all was lost, he yell'd,  
And bit his shield, and dash'd it on the ground,  
And swaying his two-handed sword about him,  
Two deaths at every swing, ran in upon us  
And died so, and I loved him as I hate  
This liar who made me liar. If Hate can kill,  
And Loathing wield a Saxon battle-axe—

EDITH. Waste not thy might before the battle!

HAROLD. No,  
And thou must hence. Stigand will see thee safe,

And so—Farewell.                    [*He is going, but turns back.*

The ring thou dardest not wear.

I have had it fashion'd, see, to meet my hand.

[*HAROLD shows the ring which is on his finger.*

Farewell !                    [*He is going, but turns back again.*

I am dead as Death this day to ought of earth's

Save William's death or mine.

EDITH.

Thy death !—to-day !

Is it not thy birthday ?

HAROLD.

Ay, that happy day !

A birthday welcome ! happy days and many !

One—this !

[*They embrace.*

Look, I will bear thy blessing into the battle

And front the doom of God.

NORMAN CRIES (*heard in the distance*).    Ha Rou !

Ha Rou !

*Enter GURTH.*

GURTH.    The Norman moves !

HAROLD.

Harold and Holy Cross !

[*Exeunt HAROLD and GURTH.*

*Enter STIGAND.*

STIGAND.    Our Church in arms—the lamb the  
                  lion—not

Spear into pruning-hook—the counter way—

Cowl, helm ; and crozier, battle-axe. Abbot Alfwig,  
Leofric, and all the monks of Peterboro'  
Strike for the king ; but I, old wretch, old Stigand,  
With hands too limp to brandish iron—and yet  
I have a power—would Harold ask me for it—  
I have a power.

EDITH. What power, holy father ?

STIGAND. Power now from Harold to command  
thee hence

And see thee safe from Senlac.

EDITH. I remain !

STIGAND. Yea, so will I, daughter, until I find  
Which way the battle balance. I can see it  
From where we stand : and, live or die, I would  
I were among them !

CANONS *from Waltham (singing without).*

Salva patriam  
Sancte Pater,  
Salva Fili,  
Salva Spiritus,  
Salva patriam,  
Sancta Mater.<sup>1</sup>

EDITH. Are those the blessed angels quiring,  
father ?

<sup>1</sup> The *a* throughout these Latin hymns should be sounded broad, as in 'father.'



STIGAND. No, daughter, but the canons out of  
Waltham,

The king's foundation, that have follow'd him.

EDITH. O God of battles, make their wall of  
shields

Firm as thy cliffs, strengthen their palisades !

What is that whirring sound ?

STIGAND. The Norman arrow !

EDITH. Look out upon the battle—is he safe ?

STIGAND. The king of England stands between  
his banners.

He glitters on the crowning of the hill.

God save King Harold !

EDITH. —chosen by his people

And fighting for his people !

STIGAND. There is one

Come as Goliath came of yore—he flings

His brand in air and catches it again,

He is chanting some old warsong.

EDITH. And no David

To meet him ?

STIGAND. Ay, there springs a Saxon on him,

Falls—and another falls.

EDITH. Have mercy on us !

STIGAND. Lo ! our good Gurth hath smitten him  
to the death.

EDITH. So perish all the enemies of Harold !

CANONS (*singing*).

Hostis in Angliam  
Ruit prædator,  
Illorum, Domine,  
Scutum scindatur !  
Hostis per Angliæ  
Plagas bacchatur ;  
Casa crematur,  
Pastor fugatur  
Grex trucidatur—

STIGAND. Illos trucida, Domine.

EDITH. Ay, good father.

CANONS (*singing*).

Illorum scelera  
Pœna sequatur !

ENGLISH CRIES. Harold and Holy Cross ! Out !  
out !

STIGAND. Our javelins  
Answer their arrows. All the Norman foot  
Are storming up the hill. The range of knights  
Sit, each a statue on his horse, and wait.

ENGLISH CRIES. Harold and God Almighty !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou ! Ha Rou !

CANONS (*singing*).

Eques cum pedite  
Præpediatur !  
Illorum in lacrymas  
Cruor fundatur !  
Pereant, pereant,  
Anglia precatur.

STIGAND. Look, daughter, look.

EDITH. Nay, father, look for *me* !

STIGAND. Our axes lighten with a single flash  
About the summit of the hill, and heads  
And arms are sliver'd off and splinter'd by  
Their lightning—and they fly—the Norman flies.

EDITH. Stigand, O father, have we won the  
day ?

STIGAND. No, daughter, no—they fall behind the  
horse—

Their horse are thronging to the barricades ;  
I see the gonfanon of Holy Peter  
Floating above their helmets—ha ! he is down !

EDITH. He down ! Who down ?

STIGAND. The Norman Count is down.

EDITH. So perish all the enemies of England !

STIGAND. No, no, he hath risen again—he bares  
his face—

Shouts something—he points onward—all their horse  
Swallow the hill locust-like, swarming up.

EDITH. O God of battles, make his battle-axe keen  
As thine own sharp-dividing justice, heavy  
As thine own bolts that fall on crimeful heads  
Charged with the weight of heaven wherefrom they fall !

CANONS (*singing*).

Jacta tonitrua  
Deus bellator !  
Surgas e tenebris,  
Sis vindicator !  
Fulmina, fulmina  
Deus vastator !

EDITH. O God of battles, they are three to one,  
Make thou one man as three to roll them down !

CANONS (*singing*).

Equus cum equite  
Dejiciatur !  
Acies, Acies  
Prona sternatur !  
Illorum lanceas  
Frangere Creator !

STIGAND. Yea, yea, for how their lances snap and  
shiver

Against the shifting blaze of Harold's axe !  
War-woodman of old Woden, how he fells  
The mortal copse of faces ! There ! And there !  
The horse and horseman cannot meet the shield,  
The blow that brains the horseman cleaves the horse,  
The horse and horseman roll along the hill,  
They fly once more, they fly, the Norman flies !

Equus cum equite  
Præcipitatur.

EDITH. O God, the God of truth hath heard my  
cry.  
Follow them, follow them, drive them to the sea !

Illorum scelera  
Pœna sequatur !

STIGAND. Truth ! no ; a lie ; a trick, a Norman  
trick !  
They turn on the pursuer, horse against foot,  
They murder all that follow.

EDITH. Have mercy on us !

STIGAND. Hot-headed fools—to burst the wall of  
shields !  
They have broken the commandment of the king !  
EDITH. *His* oath was broken—O holy Norman  
Saints,

Ye that are now of heaven, and see beyond  
Your Norman shrines, pardon it, pardon it,  
That he forsware himself for all he loved,  
Me, me and all ! Look out upon the battle !

STIGAND. They thunder again upon the barricades.  
My sight is eagle, but the strife so thick—  
This is the hottest of it : hold, ash ! hold, willow !

ENGLISH CRIES. Out, out !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou !

STIGAND. Ha ! Gurth hath leapt upon him  
And slain him : he hath fallen.

EDITH. And I am heard.  
Glory to God in the Highest ! fallen, fallen !

STIGAND. No, no, his horse—he mounts another  
—wields  
His war-club, dashes it on Gurth, and Gurth,  
Our noble Gurth, is down !

EDITH. Have mercy on us !

STIGAND. And Leofwin is down !

EDITH. Have mercy on us !  
O Thou that knowest, let not my strong prayer  
Be weaken'd in thy sight, because I love  
The husband of another !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou ! Ha Rou !

EDITH. I do not hear our English war-cry.

STIGAND. No.

EDITH. Look out upon the battle—is he safe ?

STIGAND. He stands between the banners with the  
dead

So piled about him he can hardly move.

EDITH (*takes up the war-cry*). Out ! out !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou !

EDITH (*cries out*). Harold and Holy Cross !

NORMAN CRIES. Ha Rou ! Ha Rou !

EDITH. What is that whirring sound ?

STIGAND. The Norman sends his arrows up to  
Heaven,

They fall on those within the palisade !

EDITH. Look out upon the hill—is Harold there ?

STIGAND. Sanguelac—Sanguelac—the arrow—the  
arrow !—away !

SCENE II.—FIELD OF THE DEAD. NIGHT.

ALDWYTH *and* EDITH.

ALDWYTH. O Edith, art thou here ? O Harold,  
Harold—

Our Harold—we shall never see him more.

EDITH. For there was more than sister in my kiss,  
And so the saints were wroth. I cannot love them,  
For they are Norman saints—and yet I should—  
They are so much holier than their harlot's son  
With whom they play'd their game against the king !

ALDWYTH. The king is slain, the kingdom over-  
thrown !

EDITH. No matter !

ALDWYTH. How no matter, Harold slain ?—  
I cannot find his body. O help me thou !  
O Edith, if I ever wrought against thee,  
Forgive me thou, and help me here !

EDITH. No matter !

ALDWYTH. Not help me, nor forgive me ?

EDITH. So thou saidest.

ALDWYTH. I say it now, forgive me !

EDITH. Cross me not !

I am seeking one who wedded me in secret.  
Whisper ! God's angels only know it. Ha !  
What art *thou* doing here among the dead ?  
They are stripping the dead bodies naked yonder,  
And thou art come to rob them of their rings !

ALDWYTH. O Edith, Edith, I have lost both crown  
And husband.

EDITH. So have I.

ALDWYTH. I tell thee, girl,  
I am seeking my dead Harold.

EDITH. And I mine !  
The Holy Father strangled him with a hair  
Of Peter, and his brother Tostig helpt ;  
The wicked sister clapt her hands and laugh'd ;  
Then all the dead fell on him.



ALDWYTH.

Edith, Edith—

EDITH. What was he like, this husband? like to thee?

Call not for help from me. I knew him not.  
He lies not here: not close beside the standard.  
Here fell the truest, manliest hearts of England.  
Go further hence and find him.

ALDWYTH.

She is crazed!

EDITH. That doth not matter either. Lower the light.

He must be here.

*Enter two CANONS, OSGOD and ATHELRIC, with torches. They turn over the dead bodies and examine them as they pass.*

OSGOD.

I think that this is Thurkill.

ATHELRIC. More likely Godric.

OSGOD.

I am sure this body

Is Alfwig, the king's uncle.

ATHELRIC.

So it is!

No, no—brave Gurth, one gash from brow to knee!

OSGOD.

And here is Leofwin.

EDITH.

And here is *He*!

ALDWYTH. Harold? Oh no—nay, if it were—my God,

They have so maim'd and murder'd all his face  
There is no man can swear to him.

EDITH.

But one woman !

Look you, we never mean to part again.

I have found him, I am happy.

Was there not someone ask'd me for forgiveness ?

I yield it freely, being the true wife

Of this dead King, who never bore revenge.

*Enter COUNT WILLIAM and WILLIAM MALET.*

WILLIAM. Who be these women ? And what  
body is this ?

EDITH. Harold, thy better !

WILLIAM.

Ay, and what art thou ?

EDITH. His wife !

MALET. Not true, my girl, here is the Queen !

*[Pointing out ALDWYTH.]*

WILLIAM (*to ALDWYTH*). Wast thou his Queen ?

ALDWYTH. I was the Queen of Wales.

WILLIAM. Why then of England. Madam, fear  
us not.

(*To MALET.*) Knowest thou this other ?

MALET.

When I visited England,

Some held she was his wife in secret—some—

Well—some believed she was his paramour.

EDITH. Norman, thou liest ! liars all of you,

Your Saints and all ! *I* am his wife ! and she—  
For look, our marriage ring !

*[She draws it off the finger of HAROLD.]*

I lost it somehow—

I lost it, playing with it when I was wild.

*That* bred the doubt ! but I am wiser now . . .

I am too wise . . . Will none among you all

Bear me true witness—only for this once—

That I have found it here again ? *[She puts it on.]*

And thou,

Thy wife am I for ever and evermore.

*[Falls on the body and dies.]*

WILLIAM. Death !—and enough of death for this  
one day,

The day of St. Calixtus, and the day,

My day when I was born.

MALET. And this dead king's

Who, king or not, hath kinglike fought and fallen,

His birthday, too. It seems but yestereven

I held it with him in his English halls,

His day, with all his roof-tree ringing 'Harold,'

Before he fell into the snare of Guy ;

When all men counted Harold would be king,

And Harold was most happy.

WILLIAM. Thou art half English

Take them away !

Malet, I vow to build a church to God

Here on the hill of battle ; let our high altar  
Stand where their standard fell . . . where these two  
lie.

Take them away, I do not love to see them.  
Pluck the dead woman off the dead man, Malet !

MALET. Faster than ivy. Must I hack her arms  
off ?

How shall I part them ?

WILLIAM. Leave them. Let them be !

Bury him and his paramour together.  
He that was false in oath to me, it seems  
Was false to his own wife. We will not give him  
A Christian burial : yet he was a warrior,  
And wise, yea truthful, till that blighted vow  
Which God avenged to-day.  
Wrap them together in a purple cloak  
And lay them both upon the waste sea-shore  
At Hastings, there to guard the land for which  
He did forswear himself—a warrior—ay,  
And but that Holy Peter fought for us,  
And that the false Northumbrian held aloof,  
And save for that chance arrow which the Saints  
Sharpen'd and sent against him—who can tell ?—  
Three horses had I slain beneath me : twice  
I thought that all was lost. Since I knew battle,  
And that was from my boyhood, never yet—  
No, by the splendour of God—have I fought men

Like Harold and his brethren, and his guard  
Of English. Every man about his king  
Fell where he stood. They loved him : and, pray God  
My Normans may but move as true with me  
To the door of death. Of one self-stock at first,  
Make them again one people—Norman, English ;  
And English, Norman ; we should have a hand  
To grasp the world with, and a foot to stamp it . . .  
Flat. Praise the Saints. It is over. No more blood !  
I am king of England, so they thwart me not,  
And I will rule according to their laws.

(*To ALDWYTH.*) Madam, we will entreat thee with all  
honour.

ALDWYTH. My punishment is more than I can  
bear.



## NOTES.





## NOTES TO QUEEN MARY.

p. 5. *QUEEN MARY*. [First published in 1875. Played at the Lyceum in 1876, April 18th to May 13th, Henry Irving as Philip and Mrs. Crowe as Mary, with incidental music by Sir Charles Stanford.—ED.]

“Philip” was one of Irving’s best characters.

This trilogy of plays—*Harold*, *Becket*, and *Queen Mary*—portray the making of England. In *Harold* we have the great conflict between Danes, Saxons, and Normans for supremacy, the awakening of the English people and clergy from the slumber into which they had for the most part fallen, and the forecast of the greatness of our composite race.

In *Becket* the struggle is between the Crown and the Church for predominance, a struggle which continued for many centuries.

In *Mary* are described the final downfall of Roman Catholicism in England, and the dawning of a new age: for after the era of

priestly domination comes the era of the freedom of the individual.

In *The Foresters* (founded on the old ballads) I have sketched the state of the people in another great transition period of the making of England, when the barons sided with the people and eventually won for them the Magna Charta.

[During 1874 and 1875 my father worked hard and unceasingly at his *Queen Mary*, "more of a chronicle-play" he called it. The first list of books which he read on the subject is written down in his note-book: "Collier's *Ecclesiastical History*, Fuller's *Church History*, Burnet's *Reformation*, Foxe's *Book of Martyrs*, Hayward's *Edward*, Cave's *P. X. Y.*, Hooker, Neale's *History of the Puritans*, Strype's *Ecclesiastical Memorials*, Strype's *Cranmer*, Strype's *Parker*, Phillips' *Pole*, *Primitive Fathers No Papists*, Lingard's *History of England*, *Church Historians of England*, *Zürich Letters*, and *Original Letters and Correspondence of Archbishop Parker* (published by the Parker Society)," in addition to Froude, Holinshed, and Camden.

With respect to character-painting my father considered *Queen Mary* the most successful of his plays, but with his keen sense of truth always regretted that he had not, through lack of knowledge, done justice, as he thought, to Sir Thomas White, Lord Mayor of London.

In few ages of the Christian era can the words "I came not to send peace but a sword" have been more sorrowfully verified than in the life of Mary Tudor. The wrong, done by her father to her mother and herself, was a sword that early pierced through Mary's own soul. She had, my father thought, been harshly judged by the popular verdict of tradition, therefore he had a desire to let her be seen as he pictured her in his imagination. Hence he was attracted toward the subject. He pitied the poor girl, who not only was cast down by her father from her high estate, but treated with shameless contumely by the familiar friends of her childhood. What wonder that a nature originally bright should thus have been clouded ! He sympathised with her queenly courage, dramatically expressed by him, when, after her accession, triumphant over revolt, she flashes out with :

My foes are at my feet, and Philip King.

He held that all allowance ought to be made for her, when, her high hopes for the Church and for the kingdom having been rekindled and quenched, the clouds of youth gathered again into a settled gloom. Throughout all history, he said, there was nothing more mournful than the final tragedy of this woman, who, with her deep longing for love, found herself hated by her people, abandoned

by her husband: and harassed in the hour of death by the restlessness of despair.<sup>1</sup>

The real difficulty of the drama, as my father was aware, is to give sufficient relief to its intense sadness, especially to the scenes in which Mary's devotion is repelled by Philip's coldness, consummated in that last scene, where she sits upon the ground, rocking herself to and fro, making her lament.

The high-spirited Elizabeth, whose star rises as Mary's declines, the humour of the citizens and of the country-people, and the holy calm of the meek and penitent Cranmer provide the only artistic relief possible.

He pass'd out smiling, and he walk'd upright ;  
His eye was like a soldier's, whom the general  
He looks to and he leans on as his God  
Hath rated for some backwardness and bidd'n  
him

Charge one against a thousand, and the man  
Hurls his soil'd life against the pikes and dies.

ED.]

<sup>1</sup> The well-known critic Mons. Augustin Filon writes in *Le Théâtre contemporain* (1895): "Vienne une main pieuse qui dégage ces deux drames (*Queen Mary* and *Harold*), fasse circuler l'air et la lumière autour de leurs lignes essentielles: vienne un grand acteur qui compresse et incarne Harold, une grande actrice qui se passionne pour le caractère de Marie, et, sans effort, Tennyson prendra sa place parmi les dramaturges."

The plays also seem to have appealed to no less an authority than Mons. Jules Claretie, who has described them as "beaux drames, et nobles inventions théâtrales."

p. 21. line 4. (Act I. Sc. iv.)

ELIZABETH. *Why do you go so gay then?*

COURTENAY. *Velvet and gold.*

[The Queen treated Courtenay as a child, and forbad him to dine abroad without permission, or to wear his velvet and gold dress which he had had made to take his seat in. Renard feared him as a rival to Philip. (Renard to Charles V., Sept. 19, 1553, Rolls House MSS., and Froude's *History of England*, vol. vi. p. 97.—ED.)]

p. 27. line 14. (Act I. Scene iv.)

*To the Pleiads, uncle; they have lost a sister.*

[The Pleiads were daughters of Atlas, and were placed among the stars by Zeus. One of them, Electra, left her place in the heavens that she might not witness the fall of Troy, which her son Dardanus had founded.—ED.]

p. 41. line 12. (Act I. Sc. v.)

*I am English Queen, not Roman Emperor*

was much cheered by the people. The play came out when the Queen was proclaimed Empress of India.

p. 53. line 10. (Act II. Sc. i.) [Alington Castle, on the Medway. My father often visited this castle (built by the father of the poet Sir Thomas Wyatt, Sir Henry Wyatt) when he was staying with his brother-in-law, Edmund Lushington, at Park House. Thomas Wyatt, the poet, was

born here in 1503, and died in 1542, and left it to his son, who is the Wyatt of the play.—ED.]

*p.* 57. line 16. (Act II. Sc. ii.) For Queen Mary's speech, *In mine own person*, see Holinshed. [She spoke in a deep voice like a man.

La voce grossa et quasi de huomo.

Giovanni Michele, Ellis, vol. ii. series 2.  
ED.]

*p.* 75. (Act III. Sc. i.) [*Nine Worthies*, Joshua, David, Judas Maccabæus, Hector, Alexander, Julius Cæsar, King Arthur, Charlemagne, and Godfrey of Bouillon.—ED.]

*p.* 76. line 4. (Act III. Sc. i.) *the tree in Virgil*. See *Aeneid*, vi. 206.

*p.* 90. line 10. (Act III. Sc. ii.) *the heathen giant* [Antæus.—ED.]

*p.* 102. line 17. (Act III. Sc. iii.) *For ourselves we do protest*. [For Pole's speech see Froude's *History of England*, vol. vi. pp. 276-281 :

"I confess to you that I have the keys—not as mine own keys, but as the keys of him that sent me : and yet I cannot open, not for want of power in me to give, but for certain impediments in you to receive, which must be taken away before my commission can take effect. This I protest before you, my commission is not of prejudice to any person. I am come not to destroy but to build ; I come

to reconcile, not to condemn ; I am not come to compel but to call again ; I am not come to call anything in question already done ; but my commission is of grace and clemency to such as will receive it—for, touching all matters that be past, they shall be as things cast into the sea of forgetfulness. But the mean whereby you shall receive this benefit is to revoke and repeal those laws and statutes which be impediments, blocks, and bars to the execution of my commission. For, like as I myself had neither place nor voice to speak here amongst you, but was in all respects a banished man, till such time as ye had repealed those laws that lay in my way, even so cannot you receive the benefit and grace offered from the Apostolic See until the abrogation of such laws whereby you had disjoined and dissevered yourselves from the unity of Christ's Church."—ED.]

p. 107. lines 7, 8. (Act III. Sc. iv.)

*an amphisbæna,*

*Each end a sting.*

[Cf.

"Scorpion and asp and amphisbæna dire."

*Par. Lost*, x. 524.

ED.]

p. 126. lines 8, 9. (Act III. Sc. vi.)

*like the wild hedge-rose*

*Of a soft winter, possible, not probable.*

[My father made this simile from a wild-rose bush at Freshwater which was in full blossom in January.—ED.]

*p.* 130. line 5. (Act III. Sc. vi.) *what Virgil sings.* Cf. Virgil's *Aeneid*, iv. 569.

*p.* 132. (Act III. Sc. vi.) [Philip was weary of England and of his childless queen. "He told her that his father wanted to see him, but that his absence would not be extended beyond a fortnight or three weeks ; she should go with him to Dover ; and if she desired she could wait there for his return" (Noailles, vol. v. pp. 77-82 ; Froude's *History of England*, vol. vi. p. 362).—ED.]

*p.* 152. line 9. (Act IV. Sc. iii.) *What saith St. John?*  
1 John ii. 15.

*p.* 153. line 13. (Act IV. Sc. iii.)

*And now, and forasmuch as I have come.*

[“And now, forasmuch as I am come to the last end of my life, whereupon hangeth all my life past and all my life to come, either to live with my Saviour Christ in joy, or else to be ever in pain with wicked devils in hell ; and I see before mine eyes presently either heaven” (*pointing upwards*) “or hell” (*pointing downwards*) “ready to swallow me. I shall therefore declare unto you my very faith, without colour or dissimulation ; for now it is



no time to dissemble. I believe in God the Father almighty, Maker of heaven and earth ; in every article of the Catholic faith ; every word and sentence taught by our Saviour Christ, his apostles and prophets, in the Old and New Testament. And now I come to the great thing that troubleth my conscience more than any other thing that ever I said or did in my life, and that is the setting abroad of writings contrary to the truth, which here I now renounce and refuse, as things written with my hand contrary to the truth which I thought in my heart, and written for fear of death to save my life, if it might be ; and that is, all such bills and papers as I have written and signed with my hand since my degradation, wherein I have written many things untrue ; and forasmuch as my hand offended in writing contrary to my heart, my hand therefore shall first be punished ; for if I may come to the fire, it shall be the first burnt ” (See Harleian MSS. 417 and 422, and Froude’s *History of England*, vol. vi. pp. 426-428).—ED.]

*p.* 158. lines 3, 4. (Act iv. Sc. iii.)

*And Ignorance crying in the streets, and all men  
Regarding her.*

[Cf. Proverbs i. 20.—ED.]

*pp.* 160-162. (Act iv. Sc. iii.) [The Berkshire dialect of Joan and Tib was corrected for my father by

Tom Hughes, author of *Tom Brown's School-days*.—ED.]

- p.* 167. line 23. (Act v. Sc. i.) *lower our kingly flag.*  
See Prescott's *History of Philip the Second*, vol. i. p. 113: "Lord Howard is said to have fired a gun, as he approached Philip's squadron, in order to compel it to lower its topsails in acknowledgment of the supremacy of the English on the narrow seas."

- p.* 201. line 23. (Act v. Sc. v.)

*Thou light a torch that never will go out!*

[She refers to Latimer's words to Ridley when they were burnt at the stake: "We shall this day light such a candle, by God's grace, as I trust shall never be put out."—ED.]

- p.* 203. line 18. (Act v. Sc. v.) After Mary's speech, ending "Help me hence," the end of the last Act of the Acting Edition<sup>1</sup> ran thus:

[*Falls into the arms of* LADY CLARENCE.

ALICE. The hand of God hath help'd her hence.

LADY CLARENCE. Not yet.

[*To* ELIZABETH *as she enters.*

Speak, speak, a word of yours may wake her.

<sup>1</sup> As produced at the Lyceum Theatre with Irving as Philip, and Miss Kate Bateman as Queen Mary.

On the Australian stage Miss Dargon won a triumph in *Queen Mary*. It was very popular when produced at the Melbourne Theatre-Royal, and had a long run; and when reproduced at the Bijou Theatre in the same city had a second long run.

ELIZABETH (*kneeling at her sister's knee*).

Mary !

MARY. Mary ! who calls ? 'tis long since  
any one

Has called me Mary—she—

There in the dark she sits and calls for me—  
She that should wear her state before the world.  
My Father's own true wife. Ay, madam. Hark !  
For she will call again.

ELIZABETH. Mary, my sister !

MARY. That's not the voice !

Who is it steps between me and the light ?

[*Puts her arm round ELIZABETH'S neck.*

I held her in my arms a guileless babe,  
And mourn'd her orphan doom along with mine.  
The crown ! she comes for that ! take it and  
feel it !

It stings the touch ! It is not gold but thorns !

[*MARY starts up.*

The crown of crowns ! Play not with holy  
things ! [*Clasps her hands and kneels.*

Keep you the faith ! . . . yea, mother, yea I  
come ! [*Dies.*

LADY CLARENCE. She is dead.

ELIZABETH (*kneeling by the body*). Poor  
sister ! Peace be with the dead.

[*Curtain.*

## APPENDIX TO NOTES ON QUEEN MARY.

*Letters from Robert Browning.*

19 WARWICK CRESCENT, W.,  
*June 30th, 1875.*

MY DEAR TENNYSON—Thank you very much for *Queen Mary*, the gift, and even more for *Queen Mary*, the poem : it is astonishingly fine. Conception, execution, the whole and the parts, I see nowhere the shade of a fault, thank you once again ! I am going to begin it afresh now. What a joy it is that such a poem should be, and be yours !

All affectionate regards to Mrs. Tennyson from yours  
ever,

ROBERT BROWNING.

19 WARWICK CRESCENT, W.,  
*April 19th, 1876.*

MY DEAR TENNYSON—I want to be among the earliest who assure you of the complete success of your *Queen Mary* last night. I have more than once seen a more satisfactory performance of it, to be sure, in what Carlyle calls “the Private Theatre under my own hat,” because there and then not a line nor a word was left out ; nay, there were abundant “encores” of half the speeches ; still whatever was left by the stage scissors suggested what a quantity of “cuttings” would furnish one with an after-feast.

Irving was very good indeed, and the others did their best, nor so badly.

The love as well as admiration for the author was conspicuous, indeed, I don't know whether you ought to have been present to enjoy it, or were not safer in absence from a smothering of flowers and deafening "tumult of acclaim," but Hallam was there to report, and Mrs. Tennyson is with you to believe. All congratulations to you both from yours affectionately ever,

ROBERT BROWNING.

---

## QUEEN MARY.<sup>1</sup>

BY THE LATE SIR RICHARD JEBB.

THE appearance of Tennyson in the field of drama is an event of interest both for English poetry and for the English stage. To say that the experiment was regarded with some anxiety by those who most appreciate the subtlety of his artistic power is only to say that a fine poem in the dramatic form is not necessarily a fine drama; but, unless we are deceived, it will be generally allowed that *Queen Mary* is not only a fine poem but a fine drama, and that though each of the several powers which go to make it so has already been proved by the author, the masterly harmony in which they work together here entitles *Queen Mary* to be considered something more than merely a success in a new kind. The dramatic glow and impetus which are proper to a poem of action may be imitated but

<sup>1</sup> From *The Times*, June 19, 1875.

cannot be replaced by epic splendour or lyrical passion. In our own days we have seen these or feebler substitutes essaying to do duty for it, but it is long since the genuine inspiration, at least of tragedy, has been among us. The ingenuity of the apologies which have been suggested by the fact is characteristic of the age which required them, but the fact is generally allowed. If we welcome Tennyson's drama for one reason more than another, it is for this, because here we seem to recognize the presence of that rare and precious virtue which has so long seemed dead even in those works of English poetry which are most distinctly products of genius—dramatic fire; and if we had to say when last this great quality found a comparably vivid embodiment in the treatment of an English historical subject, we should not know when to stay our search until it had carried us back to the year when the series of Shakespeare's English Histories was completed and crowned with *Henry VIII.*

The action of the drama covers the five years from Mary's accession in 1553 to her death in 1558. As a study of the time at once truthful in its broad aspects and accurate in detail, we believe that it would bear the scrutiny of Mr. Froude<sup>1</sup> and Mr. Spedding. As a vivid picture of the whole reign<sup>2</sup>—of the feeling in England

<sup>1</sup> Froude wrote to my father: "I cannot trust myself to say how greatly I admire the play. . . . You have reclaimed one more section of English history from the wilderness and given it a form in which it will be fixed for ever. No one since Shakespeare has done that. When we were beginning to think that we were to have no more from you, you have given us the greatest of your works."

<sup>2</sup> For the characterization, see *Memoir*, vol. ii. p. 177: "In few ages," etc.

towards the Spanish marriage, of Mary's effort to cancel not merely the Protestant Reformation, but the more moderate reforms of the New Learning, of the temper in which the Parliament and the nation, after the submission to the Papacy, refused to accept the purely Catholic policy of Spain, and lastly, of that profound tragedy which centres in the blasted hopes and blighted love of the Queen—the drama merely as a chapter of English history can be appreciated by all. The First Act opens in "Aldgate, richly decorated." Edward VI.'s plan and Northumberland's plot have been defeated; Lady Jane Grey is in the Tower, and the Marshalman is shouting, "Long live Queen Mary, the lawful and legitimate daughter of Harry the Eighth." There is a good touch in the dialogue between the citizens as they are waiting for the Royal procession to go by :

OLD NOKES (*dreamily*). Who's a-passing? King Edward or King Richard?

THIRD CITIZEN. No, old Nokes.

OLD NOKES. It's Harry!

THIRD CITIZEN. It's Queen Mary.

OLD NOKES. The blessed Mary's a-passing!

[*Falls on his knees.*]

Successive scenes then show us Cranmer in Lambeth Palace, urged by Peter Martyr to fly from the vengeance sure to come upon him from the daughter of Katharine of Aragon, but refusing; Noailles, the French Ambassador, busy in sowing dissensions, Elizabeth hearing from Courtenay, Earl of Devon, the scheme afoot to thwart the Spanish marriage; and lastly, Mary, over-

come with the joy following on anxiety, as she sinks into a chair, half fainting, and Simon Renard hears from her pale lips that the Council has sanctioned her union with his master, Philip of Spain. Act II. is the stirring episode of Wyatt's rebellion, illustrated by Mary's heroic courage, and closed by the overthrow of the rebels, when, with Wyatt, Courtenay, and the Princess Elizabeth safe in the Tower, the Queen can at last say, "My foes are at my feet, and Philip King." Act III. has for its central interest the formal return of England to the Roman obedience, when Reginald Pole, Cardinal-Deacon and Legate of Julius III., in the great hall at Whitehall, hears Gardiner read the formal supplication of the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, and by authority Apostolic absolves the realm from heresy. But close upon the stately ceremony of the reconciliation follow signs that the further course of Mary's policy will not run smooth. Pole, in a stormy scene with Gardiner, himself rebukes that "overmuch severeness" with which the Faith is being vindicated, and Philip has already wearied of his childless bride :

MARY. The sunshine sweeps across my life again.  
O if I knew you felt this parting, Philip,  
As I do !

PHILIP. By St. James I do protest,  
Upon the faith and honour of a Spaniard,  
I am vastly grieved to leave your Majesty.  
Simon, is supper ready ?

Act IV. deepens the gloom which is closing upon Mary's hopes. In St. Mary's Church at Oxford, Cranmer



on his way to the fire retracts his recantation, and dies at the stake—not the shame, but the martyr of Protestantism. It has been well said “that among a crowd of far more heroic sufferers, the Protestants fixed, in spite of his recantations, on the martyrdom of Cranmer as the death-blow to Catholicism in England”; and it is with an historical as well as with a dramatic propriety that this martyrdom gives the keynote to the Fourth Act of Tennyson’s drama. The Fifth Act opens with the parting between Mary and Philip—Philip who is already weighing the chances that he may take Philibert of Savoy’s place as a suitor for Elizabeth’s hand:

PHILIP.

Is this a place

To wail in, Madam? what! a public hall.

Go in, I pray you.

MARY.

Do not seem so changed.

Say go; but only say it lovingly.

PHILIP. You do mistake. I am not one to change.

I never loved you more.

Caraffa, Paul IV., has succeeded Julius III. as Pope, and, moved chiefly by hatred of Spain, has cited Cardinal Pole to Rome, reviving against him the old charge of Lutheranism. Mary now stands alone among an execrating people. At a house near London Elizabeth receives a visit from an envoy of Philip, the Count of Feria, who comes to sound her, who is loftily repulsed, and who finally divulges that at that very moment Mary is dying. Elizabeth hastens to her sister, and finds her yet breathing:

ELIZABETH. She knew me, and acknowledged me  
her heir,

Pray'd me to pay her debts, and keep the Faith ;  
Then claspt the cross, and pass'd away in peace.  
I left her lying still and beautiful,  
More beautiful than in life. Why would you vex yourself,  
Poor sister ? Sir, I swear I have no heart  
To be your Queen. To reign is restless fence,  
Tierce, quart, and trickery. Peace is with the dead.  
Her life was winter, for her spring was nipt :  
And she loved much : pray God she be forgiven.

CECIL. Peace with the dead, who never were at  
peace !

Yet she loved one so much—I needs must say—  
That never English monarch dying left  
England so little.

ELIZABETH. But with Cecil's aid  
And others, if our person be secured  
From traitor stabs—we will make England great.

*Enter* PAGET, *and other* LORDS OF THE COUNCIL,  
SIR RALPH BAGENHALL, *etc.*

LORDS. God save Elizabeth, the Queen of England !

BAGENHALL. God save the Crown ! the Papacy is  
no more.

PAGET (*aside*). Are we so sure of that ?

ACCLAMATION. God save the Queen !

The paramount merit of the poem as a work of art consists in the skill with which the dramatist has held the balance between the horror excited by Mary, the persecutor, and the compassion felt for Mary, the sufferer. Howard tells Paget how he has seen heretics

of the poorer sort, in daily expectation of the rack, lying chained in stifling dungeons over steaming sewers, fed with bread that crawled upon the tongue, drinking water of which every drop was a worm, until they died of rotted limbs. Among those voices of the night which pass the palace in which Mary is dying, there is one of a citizen who had seen a woman burnt in Guernsey :

and in her agony

The mother came upon her—a child was born—  
And, sir, they hurl'd it back into the fire,  
That, being but baptized in fire, the babe  
Might be in fire for ever.

The impression made by the entire drama deepens that red brand which rests on the memory of Mary's reign. Yet, while the awful cruelties of a more than Spanish bigotry are thus made to live before the imagination, we are at the same time irresistibly drawn to sympathise with whatever is womanly, whatever is heroic, whatever is of tragic intensity in the miserable story of Mary's personal life :

My hard father hated me ;  
My brother rather hated me than loved ;  
My sister cowers and hates me. Holy Virgin,  
Plead with thy blessed Son ; grant me my prayer :  
Give me my Philip ; and we two will lead  
The living waters of the Faith again  
Back thro' their widow'd channel here, and watch  
The parch'd banks rolling incense, as of old,  
To heaven, and kindled with the palms of Christ !

When some months after her marriage Mary for a

moment anticipates the realization of a great hope, her joy finds utterance in what is, perhaps, the greatest, as it is certainly the most pathetic passage of the whole poem :

MARY. He hath awaked ! he hath awaked !  
He stirs within the darkness !  
Oh, Philip, husband ! now thy love to mine  
Will cling more close, and those bleak manners thaw,  
That make me shamed and tongue-tied in my love.  
The second Prince of Peace—  
The great unborn defender of the Faith,  
Who will avenge me of mine enemies—  
He comes, and my star rises.  
The stormy Wyatts and Northumberlands,  
The proud ambitions of Elizabeth,  
And all her fieriest partisans—are pale  
Before my star !  
The light of this new learning wanes and dies :  
The ghosts of Luther and Zuinglius fade  
Into the deathless hell which is their doom  
Before my star !  
His sceptre shall go forth from Ind to Ind !  
His sword shall hew the heretic peoples down !  
His faith shall clothe the world that will be his,  
Like universal air and sunshine ! Open,  
Ye everlasting gates ! The King is here !—  
My star, my son !

And when the end is near, and Mary, on her death-bed, has passed into delirium, the anguish brought by the failure of that hope is interpreted in a scene of wonderful power, from which we quote only a few lines :

MARY.   This Philip shall not  
Stare in upon me in my haggardness ;  
Old, miserable, diseased,  
Incapable of children. Come thou down.

[Cuts out the picture and throws it down.

Lie there. (*Wails*) O God, I have kill'd my Philip!

ALICE.

No,

Madam, you have but cut the canvas out ;  
We can replace it.

MARY.

All is well then ; rest—

I will to rest ; he said, I must have rest.

The narrative passages of the drama—especially the description of Lady Jane Grey's death and of Cranmer's death—are worthy of Tennyson, and, for descriptive passages, there could not well be higher praise. The two or three songs again, are, as might have been expected, perfect in their way. The prose passages—dialogues between citizens, etc.—are in one sense the most difficult for a nineteenth-century dramatist treating a sixteenth-century subject, since it is precisely in homely talk that the artist runs most risk of seeming an antiquarian. It is Tennyson's humour which has enabled him to succeed so well here. The conversation between the two "garrulous country wives" in Act iv. Scene iii. could hardly have been written save by the author of *The Northern Farmer*. But space forbids us to dwell longer on details. We can but end as we began, by saying that we do not know where to look in post-Shakespearian English poetry for a poem in which the true fire of drama so burns as in Tennyson's *Queen Mary*.



## NOTES TO HAROLD.

p. 215. *HAROLD*. [First published in 1876, dated 1877. "A tragedy of Doom" my father called it. After the publication of *Queen Mary*, Irving, George Eliot, George Lewes, Browning, Spedding, and others urged him to continue writing more dramas. To meet the conditions of the modern drama, before writing *Harold* my father studied many recent plays. He had also refreshed his mind with the tragedies of Æschylus and Sophocles, which always seemed to him "full of noble reality, and moral beauty."—ED.]

p. 215. lines 3, 4. (Act I. Sc. i.)

*Look you, there's a star  
That dances in it as mad with agony!*

[My mother writes, October 4th, 1858, of my father: "He went to meet Mr. and Mrs. Roebuck at dinner at Swainston; and the comet was grand, with Arcturus shining brightly over the nucleus. At dinner he said he must leave the table to look at it, and they all followed. They saw *Arcturus* seemingly

*dance as if mad* when it passed out of the comet's tail. He said of the comet's tail, 'It is like a besom of destruction sweeping the sky.'"—ED.]

p. 217. line 8. (Act 1. Sc. i.)

*Did ye not outlaw your archbishop Robert?*

Robert, a monk of Jumiéges in Normandy, was appointed Archbishop of Canterbury by Edward the Confessor. He was the head of the Norman, as Earl Godwin was of the national party in England; and he so far wrought upon the Norman predilections of the king that in the end he procured the banishment of Godwin and all his sons. After a while, however, these returned with a formidable force, but the English would not fight for King Edward against them. It was then settled that the matters of quarrel between Edward and Godwin should be referred to a Gemót or Great National Council. The Normans throughout the kingdom knew well what would be the vote of this Council, and, not daring to abide by the result, fled, and among the rest Robert of Jumiéges. He, it is said, escaped by the east gate of London, and killing or wounding all that stayed him, reached Walton-on-the-Naze, whence he took ship, and past overseas never to come back.

Of all the Norman bishops, William, the Bishop of London, alone retained his bishopric.



p. 218. line 7. (Act I. Sc. i.)

*Who had my pallium from an Antipope!*

On the death of Stephen IX. in 1058, the Imperial party at Rome sent a humble message to the Empress Agnes, asking her to nominate a new Pope. Meanwhile the old Roman feudatory barons elected an anti-Pope of their own, the Cardinal Bishop of Velletri (Benedict X.), whom they hastily inaugurated, and enthroned by night. This was resented by the Empress as an act of usurpation, whereupon she empowered Hildebrand to take measures for a fresh election. Accordingly Gerard, Archbishop of Florence, was chosen, who is known by the name of Nicholas II. I quote from Milman's *Latin Christianity* the pathetic history of Benedict's subsequent degradation :

“Hildebrand the archdeacon seized him (Benedict) by force, and placed him before Nicholas and a council in the Lateran Church. They stripped him before the altar of his pontifical robes (in which he had been again invested), set him thus despoiled before the synod, put a writing in his hand, containing a long confession of every kind of wickedness. He resisted a long time, knowing himself perfectly innocent of such crimes: he was compelled to read it with very many tears and groans. His mother stood by, her hair

dishevelled, and her bosom bare, with many sobs and lamentations. His kindred stood weeping around. Hildebrand then cried aloud to the people: 'These are the deeds of the Pope whom ye have chosen!' They re-arrayed him in the pontifical robes, and formally deposed him. He was allowed to retire to the monastery of St. Agnes, where he lived in the utmost wretchedness. They prohibited him from all holy functions, would not allow him to enter the choir. By the intercession of the Archpresbyter of St. Anastasia he was permitted at length to read the Epistle; a short time after, the Gospel; but never suffered to read mass. He lived to the Pontificate of Hildebrand, who, when informed of his death, said, 'In an evil hour did I behold him; I have committed great sin.' Hildebrand commanded that he should be buried with Pontifical honours" (Milman, viii. p. 48).

It was from this Benedict that Stigand received the pallium, or sacred badge of the archiepiscopate.

*p.* 222. line 14. (Act I. Sc. i.)

*Is not my brother Wulfnoth hostage there?*

One version of the story relates that Godwin, after his reconciliation with Edward, gave hostages for his good conduct, and among them his son Wulfnoth, and that these

were handed over by the king to Count William for their better custody.

*p.* 241. line 1. (Act II. Sc. ii.)

*He was thine host in England when I went.*

Malet was half-Norman, half-English.

*p.* 242. line 8. (Act II. Sc. ii.)

*Haled thy shore-swallow'd, armour'd Normans  
up.*

In that section of the Bayeux tapestry which depicts William's war against Conan of Brittany, Harold is seen plucking the Norman soldiers two at a time from the quicksands below Mont St. Michel where the river Coesnon flows into the sea.

*p.* 244. lines 11, 12. (Act II. Sc. i.)

*The voice of any people is the sword  
That guards them, or the sword that beats  
them down.*

[Two favourite lines of Mr. Gladstone's.—ED.]

*p.* 255. line 14. (Act II. Sc. ii.)

*Some said it was thy father's deed.*

Alfred, the son of Emma (who was also mother of Edward the Confessor, and great-aunt of William the Conqueror), coming into England during the reign of Harold the Dane, the son of Cnut, was seized and blinded. This crime was imputed to Godwin; but the Witan acquitted him of the charge.

p. 257. line 7. (Act II. Sc. ii.)

*The Atheling is nearest to the throne.*

Edgar the Atheling was grandson of Edmund Ironside, and the last male representative of the House of Cerdic.

p. 261. line 11. (Act II. Sc. ii.)

*Behold the jewel of St. Pancratius.*

Concerning this jewel of Saint Pancratius, "gemma tam speciosa quam spatiosa," see Freeman's *Norman Conquest*, vol. iii. p. 686.

p. 280. line 16. (Act III. Sc. ii.)

*The Pope and that Archdeacon Hildebrand.*

[Alexander II., and Hildebrand, afterwards Gregory VII. (1073).—ED.]

p. 297. line 14. (Act IV. Sc. iii.) *Let him come ! Let him come !*

Bublie crient è weissel  
E laticome è drincheheil,  
Drinc Hindrewart è Drintome  
Drinc Helf è drinc tome.

*Roman de Rou, 12473.*

p. 304. lines 2, 3. (Act v. Sc. i.)

*Waltham, my foundation*

*For men who serve the neighbour, not themselves.*

"Of his liberality his great foundation at Waltham is an everlasting monument, and it is a monument not more of his liberality than of his wisdom. To the monastic orders

Harold seems not to have been specially liberal; his bounty took another and a better chosen direction. The foundation of a great secular college, in days when all the world seemed mad after monks, when King Eadward and Earl Leofric vied with each other in lavish gifts to religious houses at home and abroad, was in itself an act displaying no small vigour and independence of mind. The details, too, of the foundation were such as showed that the creation of Waltham was not the act of a moment of superstitious dread or of reckless bounty, but the deliberate deed of a man who felt the responsibilities of lofty rank and boundless wealth, and who earnestly sought the welfare of his Church and nation in all things" (Freeman's *Norman Conquest*, vol. ii. p. 41).

p. 307. lines 6, 7. (Act v. Sc. i.)

*that old song of Brunanburg  
Where England conquer'd.*

Constantinus, King of the Scots, after having sworn allegiance to Athelstan, allied himself with the Danes of Ireland under Anlaf, and invading England, was defeated by Athelstan and his brother Edmund with great slaughter at Brunanburh in the year 937.

See my translation of the Song of Brunanburh (entitled *Battle of Brunanburh*, vol. vi. p. 187). In rendering this Old English war-

song into modern language and alliterative rhythm I have made free use of the dactylic beat. I suppose that the original was chanted to a slow, swinging recitative.

*p.* 315. line 11. (Act v. Sc. i.) *Come as Goliath came of yore.* Taillefer the minstrel, a man of gigantic stature, who rode out alone in front of the Norman army chanting :

Taillefer, ki mult ben cantout,  
 Sor un cheval ki tost alout,  
 Devant li Dus alout cantant  
 De Karlemaine è de Rollant  
 E d' Oliver è des vassals  
 Ki morurent en Renchevals.

*Roman de Rou, 13149.*

*p.* 322. line 19. (Act v. Sc. ii.)

*Then all the dead fell on him.*

Alluding to her dream in Act 1. Sc. ii. :

and all

The dead men made at thee to murder thee.

## APPENDIX TO NOTES ON HAROLD.

*Letter from Robert Browning.*

19 WARWICK CRESCENT,  
Dec. 21st, 1876.

MY DEAR TENNYSON—True thanks again, this time for the best of Christmas presents, another great work, wise, good and beautiful. The scene where Harold is overborne to take the oath is perfect, for one instance. What a fine new ray of light you are entwining with your many coloured wreath!

I know the Conqueror's country pretty well: stood last year in his Castle of Bonneville, on the spot where tradition is that Harold took the oath; and I have passed through Dives, the place of William's embarkation, perhaps twenty times: and more than once visited the church there, built by him, where still are inscribed the names of the Norman knights who accompanied him in his expedition. You light this up again for me. All happiness befall you and yours this good season and ever.—Yours affectionately,

R. BROWNING.

HAROLD.<sup>1</sup>

BY THE LATE SIR RICHARD JEBB.

LORD TENNYSON has chosen a noble subject. The last English King of England, the hero and martyr of English freedom, is worthy to be celebrated by an English Laureate. Nor could any form of celebration have been more appropriate. Tennyson has added a new charm to the chivalrous legends which float around the British Arthur. He now proves that he can do justice to the great historical events which group themselves with a tragic distinctness around the English Harold. No historical character unites more completely than Harold all the elements of dramatic effect. His military genius, his civil virtues, his loyal and fearless championship of England against the dominion of strangers; his liberality, which has for its perpetual monument his secular foundation of Waltham; his frank and open bearing, in which prudent contemporaries blamed too slight a regard for self-interest; his generous courage, which panegyrists could not wholly vindicate from the charge of rashness; his tall stature, his comely countenance, that mighty physical strength to which the pictures of the Bayeux tapestry bear witness—all these things make Harold a man fit to stand as the central figure of a drama. But when we consider the days on which his life was cast, when we estimate the cause in which he strove and died, this fitness is seen to be enhanced tenfold by the

<sup>1</sup> From *The Times*, Dec. 18, 1876.



dramatic grandeur of his surroundings. The England of Harold's youth had just been restored from the rule of Danish Kings to the rule of the native House of Cerdic. Harold's father, the great Earl Godwin, had been the true ruler of England during the earlier years of Edward the Confessor. And when Godwin was gone Harold stepped into his place. Father and son had the same task. Each in his turn had to uphold the English cause in England against the Norman cause on both sides of the water. Edward, though of the old English stock, had deeply felt the Norman influence during the exile of his youth. But even if Edward had been purely English at heart, he was not a Godwin or a Harold. He was not a born ruler of men. Tennyson was right in calling his first drama, not *Mary Tudor*, but *Queen Mary*; and he has been right in calling his present drama, not *King Harold*, but *Harold*. Tennyson brings Harold before us, not at the moment when his formal reign begins, but in those latter days of Edward the Confessor's reign, when Harold, though not King, was already ruler, already the mainstay of England, already the pillar of the English people's hope. The great champion of England has opposed to him the great champion of Normandy. Harold has every quality which can ennoble a national defence. William has every quality which can lend terrible force to a foreign attack. If the old Norse speech hardly survived save at Bayeux, if the old Norse freedom had vanished from the settlement on the Seine, if the children of the pirates had become feudal nobles, yet at least there

was one man in whom the spirit of the sea-wolves lived on. In William the desperate fierceness of the Northern race was the wonder and the fear of mankind. His vast strength and his brilliant daring were qualities which he shared with his English foe. But the gigantic frame, the savage countenance, the irresistible fury of wrath, the pitiless cruelty of revenge, declared William a genuine Norseman. Such a Norseman, had he been nothing more, though he might have been a triumphant invader, could not have become a true conqueror. But to the passionate impetuosity which storms a town or turns the tide of a fight William joined the military and the political genius which can found a government and temper a civilization. Harold had a great antagonist. The day on which Harold and William met at Senlac was the most momentous in the history of England.

Tennyson's First Act opens in the latter days of Edward the Confessor's reign. The first scene is laid in London, at the King's Palace. A comet is blazing in the sky, and troubling the minds of men with the fear of change. While each personal ambition reads its own encouragement or its own danger in that sign, the devout King, whose work is nearly done, recognizes in it a threat of God's judgment of the "narrowness and coldness" of the realm :

EDWARD.

In heaven signs !

Signs upon earth ! signs everywhere ! your Priests  
Gross, worldly, simoniacal, unlearn'd !

They scarce can read their Psalter ; and your churches  
Uncouth, unhandsome, while in Normanland

God speaks thro' abler voices, as He dwells  
In statelier shrines. I say not this, as being  
Half Norman-blooded, nor as some have held,  
Because I love the Norman better—no,  
But dreading God's revenge upon this realm  
For narrowness and coldness : and I say it  
For the last time perchance, before I go  
To find the sweet refreshment of the Saints.  
I have lived a life of utter purity :  
I have builded the great church of Holy Peter :  
I have wrought miracles—to God the glory—  
And miracles will in my name be wrought  
Hereafter.—I have fought the fight and go—  
I see the flashing of the gates of pearl—  
And it is well with me, tho' some of you  
Have scorn'd me—ay—but after I am gone  
Woe, woe to England ! I have had a vision ;  
The seven sleepers in the cave at Ephesus  
Have turn'd from right to left.

Harold is brought before us at the outset as the man who for twelve years has been the mainstay of England, as Edward himself declares :

I know it, son ; I am not thankless : thou  
Hast broken all my foes, lighten'd for me  
The weight of this poor crown, and left me time  
And peace for prayer to gain a better one.  
Twelve years of service ! England loves thee for it.  
Thou art the man to rule her !

Harold himself, in the dialogue which follows between himself and his brothers, tells the same truth more bluntly :

The king ? the king is ever at his prayers ;  
In all that handles matter of the state  
I am the king.

Harold now craves from Edward a boon which has been well deserved. He wants a holiday. He asks permission to leave England for a while, "to hunt and hawk beyond the seas." Harold wishes to go to Normandy, where his younger brother Wulfnoth has long been a hostage in Norman hands for the loyalty of the English Godwin's house to Edward. But on this point Edward is decided. In vain does Harold plead, "Is not the Norman Count thy friend and mine?" Edward answers merely, "I pray thee, do not go to Normandy"; and then, more peremptorily, "Harold, I will not yield thee leave to go." It is agreed that Harold shall take his holiday in Flanders. The second scene—in the garden of the King's house near London—passes shortly before Harold sets out on his voyage. Edith, the ward of Edward, loves Harold, and is loved by him :

Love is come with a song and a smile,  
Welcome Love with a smile and a song :  
Love can stay but a little while.  
Why cannot he stay ? They call him away :  
Ye do him wrong, ye do him wrong ;  
Love will stay for a whole life long.

The parting between the lovers in the moonlit garden discovers the hope which has already shaped itself clearly before them :

Mine amulet . . .

This last . . . upon thine eyelids, to shut in  
A happier dream. Sleep, sleep, and thou shalt see  
My grayhounds fleeting like a beam of light,  
And hear my peregrine and her bells in heaven ;  
And other bells on earth, which yet are heaven's ;  
Guess what they be.

EDITH. He cannot guess who knows.

Farewell, my king.

HAROLD. Not yet, but then—my queen.

Their talk has been overheard by Aldwyth, widow of Griffyth, King of Wales, and daughter of Alfgar. There had long been fierce jealousy between the house of Alfgar and the house of Godwin. But now the daughter of Alfgar is drawn to the son of Godwin, the conqueror of her first lord, by the spell of a noble nature whose strength is utterly unlike her strength. She knows that his first love, at least, cannot be hers—it is Edith's. But she is resolute, politic, and patient. She sees already how the stormy days that are at hand may serve her passion as well as her ambition. She will win Harold yet. But it shall be when his crown is at stake. And her triumph shall be at the same time a triumph for the house of Alfgar.

The Second Act contains the adventures of Harold beyond seas. On his voyage to Flanders he is wrecked on the coast of Ponthieu. A fisherman, who in visiting the English coast had once seen the great Earl of Wessex, takes the news to Guy, Count of Ponthieu. For a small reward he will show the Count a captive who can pay a great ransom. The Count rides down

to the coast, seizes Harold, and carries him off to be racked or ransomed in the fortress of Beaurain. The second scene is laid at Bayeux, in the Palace of William, Duke—or, as Tennyson prefers to call him, Count—of Normandy, the future Conqueror of England. Much has happened since Harold's shipwreck. William has used his authority over his former prisoner, and actual vassal, Count Guy, to procure Harold's release. Harold has since accompanied William on an expedition against Conan, Count of the Bretons, and has done good service therein. He is now William's guest at Bayeux, where his brother Wulfnoth is still a hostage. Harold's real plight is best described in the words of his Norman entertainer :

our friend Guy

Had wrung his ransom from him by the rack,  
But that I stept between and purchased him,  
Translating his captivity from Guy  
To mine own hearth at Bayeux, where he sits  
My ransom'd prisoner.

William has resolved that Harold shall not leave him yet :

MALET. But I should let him home again, my lord.

WILLIAM. Simple ! let fly the bird within the hand,  
To catch the bird again within the bush !  
No.

Smooth thou my way, before he clash with me ;  
I want his voice in England for the crown,  
I want thy voice with him to bring him round ;  
And being brave he must be subtly cow'd,

And being truthful wrought upon to swear  
Vows that he dare not break.

By degrees it is made more and more evident to Harold that he is not to go home "save on conditions." And presently tidings reach Harold from England which make his scarcely veiled captivity yet more insupportable. Morcar and Edwin, the sons of Algar, have stirred up the Thanes of Northumbria against Earl Tostig, Harold's brother, and the whole country north of Humber "is one storm." Harold's mind is wrought on still more powerfully by the fears, the entreaties, and the forebodings of his younger and weaker brother Wulfnoth, who had already been so long the hostage of the Normans. Let Harold pause before he angers a man who tears out the eyes and slices off the hands of his prisoners. Let him think of the *oubliette*, thirty feet below the ground, and of the dogs' food thrown down through the blackness on his head. Let him think of his unhappy brother Wulfnoth. Let him think of England. Let him think of Norman licence threatening English women. Let him think of Edith. Wulfnoth's pleading, helped by time and by the news from oversea, at last does its work. William alleges a promise made to him by his cousin, Edward the Confessor. Edward had promised that, if he ever became King, he would support William's claim to be his successor. Edward's son, Edgar the Atheling—the last male of the house of Cerdic—is "sickly, slight, half-witted and a child." Then William asks Harold, "Wilt *thou* uphold my claim?" Harold says, "Ay"—if Edward has not

revoked his promise—if the Witan consents. “Thine ‘ifs,’” says his friendly prompter, Malet, “will sear thine eyes out.” Harold promises unconditionally.

But a promise is not enough. William must have an oath. In the presence of the Norman Court, Harold takes the oath. This scene, which gives the keynote to the tragedy of Harold’s personal fate, is also one of the most dramatically powerful in the play:

WILLIAM.

We have heard

Of thy just, mild, and equal governance;  
Honour to thee! thou art perfect in all honour!  
Thy naked word thy bond! confirm it now  
Before our gather’d Norman baronage,  
For they will not believe thee—as I believe.

*[Descends from his throne and stands by the ark.]*

Let all men here bear witness of our bond!

*[Beckons to HAROLD, who advances.]*

*Enter MALET behind him.*

Lay thou thy hand upon this golden pall!  
Behold the jewel of St. Pancratius  
Woven into the gold. Swear thou on this!

HAROLD. What should I swear? Why should I  
swear on this?

WILLIAM (*savagely*). Swear thou to help me to the  
crown of England.

MALET (*whispering* HAROLD). My friend, thou hast  
gone too far to palter now.

WULFNOTH (*whispering* HAROLD). Swear thou to-  
day, to-morrow is thine own.

HAROLD. I swear to help thee to the crown of  
England . . .



According as King Edward promises.

WILLIAM. Thou must swear absolutely, noble Earl.

MALET (*whispering*). Delay is death to thee, ruin to England.

WULFNOTH (*whispering*). Swear, dearest brother, I beseech thee, swear!

HAROLD (*putting his hand on the jewel*). I swear to help thee to the crown of England.

WILLIAM. Thanks, truthful Earl; I did not doubt thy word,

But that my barons might believe thy word,  
And that the Holy Saints of Normandy  
When thou art home in England, with thine own,  
Might strengthen thee in keeping of thy word,  
I made thee swear.—Show him by whom he hath sworn.

[*The two BISHOPS advance, and raise the cloth of gold. The bodies and bones of Saints are seen lying in the ark.*]

The holy bones of all the Canonised  
From all the holiest shrines in Normandy!

HAROLD. Horrible! [*They let the cloth fall again.*]

WILLIAM. Ay, for thou hast sworn an oath  
Which, if not kept, would make the hard earth rive  
To the very Devil's horns, the bright sky cleave  
To the very feet of God, and send her hosts  
Of injured Saints to scatter sparks of plague  
Thro' all your cities, blast your infants, dash  
The torch of war among your standing corn,  
Dabble your hearths with your own blood.—Enough!  
Thou wilt not break it! I, the Count—the King—  
Thy friend—am grateful for thine honest oath,  
Not coming fiercely like a conqueror, now,  
But softly as a bridegroom to his own.

For I shall rule according to your laws,  
And make your ever-jarring Earldoms move  
To music and in order—Angle, Jute,  
Dane, Saxon, Norman, help to build a throne  
Out-towering hers of France . . . The wind is fair  
For England now . . . To-night we will be merry.  
To-morrow will I ride with thee to Harfleur.

The Third Act opens at the death-bed of Edward the Confessor. Harold and the rest gaze almost with awe on his calm rest—

The rosy face, and long down-silvering beard,  
The brows unwrinkled as a summer mere

—until the King awakes to tell them of a vision which he has seen in sleep, as of an angel crying “the doom of England.” Harold has told Edward of his oath to William. Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury, has formally absolved Harold from the oath. But the validity of the absolution is doubtful, since Stigand had his pallium from the Anti-Pope Benedict. And now King Edward has resolved, as his last act, to make atonement for his own “random promise” to William by consecrating his ward, Edith, to the cloister. Harold must swear to see this vow performed :

HAROLD.            Nay, dear lord, for I have sworn  
Not to swear falsely twice.

EDWARD.                    Thou wilt not swear ?

HAROLD.    I cannot.

EDWARD.            Then on thee remains the curse,  
Harold, if thou embrace her : and on thee,  
Edith, if thou abide it,—

[The KING swoons; EDITH falls and kneels by the couch.

STIGAND. He hath swoon'd!  
Death? . . . no, as yet a breath.

HAROLD. Look up! look up!  
Edith!

ALDRED. Confuse her not; she hath begun  
Her life-long prayer for thee.

Edward wakes from the swoon in delirium, and expires with a terrible prophecy on his lips :

God  
Has fill'd the quiver, and Death has drawn the bow—  
Sanguelac ! Sanguelac ! the arrow ! the arrow ! [*Dies.*]

The second scene of the Third Act is the shadow to the light of Act i. Scene ii. Harold is now King. Harold and Edith are talking in the same garden, but Edith feels that the dead King's vow has put an everlasting barrier between herself and Harold :

They say thou art to wed the Lady Aldwyth.

While they are yet speaking, tidings come that Tostig, Harold's brother—the banished Earl of Northumbria—has landed in that country with the King of Norway, Harold Hardrada, and has routed Morcar and Edwin, the sons of Alfgar. Nor are these the worst tidings. William of Normandy has denounced King Harold to the Pope—"and that Archdeacon Hildebrand, his master"—as having sworn falsely by the Norman Saints. All France, all Burgundy, all Christendom is raised against Harold.

The Fourth Act brings the beginning of the end.

King Harold has hastened to the war in Northumbria. Edwin, Earl of Mercia, and Morcar, the new Earl of Northumbria, have been beaten back by Tostig and the King of Norway. The people are sullen. When King Harold comes no acclaim greets his standard, the golden Dragon of Wessex. But voices rise from the crowd which tell of pride in their old Danish blood, which betray the wish to see the old Northumbrian crown worn by a King of their own choice, and which, lastly, join Harold's name with Aldwyth's. Her brothers are not unskilful in their part. "We cannot swear that our people will follow thee against the Norsemen if thou deny them this."

HAROLD. Canst thou love one, who cannot love again?

ALDWYTH. Full hope have I that love will answer love.

HAROLD. Then in the name of the great God, so be it!  
Come, Aldred, join our hands before the hosts,  
That all may see.

[ALDRED *joins the hands of HAROLD and ALDWYTH and blesses them.*

The second and third scenes of the Fourth Act are prelude and sequel to the Battle of Stamford Bridge. In the second scene Harold gives Tostig a last opportunity for reconciliation, and Tostig replies with a last defiance. In the third scene, while King Harold and his bride and his warriors are still celebrating the great victory of Stamford Bridge, the banquet is interrupted by the arrival of a Thane, who has ridden night and day from the south. William of Normandy has landed at Pevensey.

The Fifth Act has for its first scene "A Tent on a Mound, from which can be seen the Field of Senlac," a spur of the Sussex Downs near Hastings, now occupied by the abbey and town of Battle. King Harold is sitting in his tent. By him stand his brothers Gurth and Leofwin; and the Monk, Hugh Margot. Margot's mission is to be, in his own phrase, a "Norman Daniel" to the English Belshazzar. But Harold is less troubled by Margot's denunciations than by the warnings from the spirits of dead and living which come to him when, that night, he is left in solitude. He beholds a vision of Edward, a vision of Wulfnoth, a vision of Tostig, a vision of the Norman Saints. Already the Holy Rood had bowed above him, as in presage of ruin, in his own house of Waltham. But still deep down in his mind there is the sense that he has stood on the side of right, and that the power which accuses him in the name of the Saints is itself a power of darkness. He cannot disentangle the sophistry; but he feels the falsehood. He starts up, battle-axe in hand, from the oppression of the terrible phantasies:

Away!

My battle-axe against your voices. Peace!  
The king's last word—"the arrow!" I shall die—  
I die for England then, who lived for England—  
What nobler? men must die.  
I cannot fall into a falser world—  
I have done no man wrong. Tostig, poor brother,  
Art *thou* so anger'd?  
Fain had I kept thine earldom in thy hands

Save for thy wild and violent will that wrench'd  
All hearts of freemen from thee. I could do  
No other than this way advise the king  
Against the race of Godwin. Is it possible  
That mortal men should bear their earthly heats  
Into yon bloodless world, and threaten us thence  
Unschool'd of Death? Thus then thou art revenged—  
I left our England naked to the South  
To meet thee in the North. The Norseman's raid  
Hath helpt the Norman, and the race of Godwin  
Hath ruin'd Godwin. No—our waking thoughts  
Suffer a stormless shipwreck in the pools  
Of sullen slumber, and arise again  
Disjointed: only dreams—where mine own self  
Takes part against myself! Why? for a spark  
Of self-disdain born in me when I sware  
Falsely to him, the falser Norman, over  
His gilded ark of mummy-saints, by whom  
I knew not that I sware,—not for myself—  
For England—yet not wholly—

*Enter EDITH.*

Edith, Edith,

Get thou into thy cloister as the king  
Will'd it: be safe: the perjury-mongering Count  
Hath made too good an use of Holy Church  
To break her close! There the great God of truth  
Fill all thine hours with peace!—A lying devil  
Hath haunted me—mine oath—my wife—I fain  
Had made my marriage not a lie; I could not:  
Thou art my bride! and thou in after years  
Praying perchance for this poor soul of mine  
In cold, white cells beneath an icy moon—

This memory to thee !—and this to England,  
My legacy of war against the Pope  
From child to child, from Pope to Pope, from age to age,  
Till the sea wash her level with her shores,  
Or till the Pope be Christ's.

Two farewells remain to be taken—from the wife whom he never loved and from the loved one whom he could not wed. Then the Norman cries are heard afar off—"Ha Rou! Ha Rou!" and the last English King of England goes forth to front the doom of God. Edith remains in the tent. As Harold leaves it, Stigand enters. By and by a whirring sound tells that the Norman archers have begun the attack. Stigand watches it from the tent, and reports to Edith each change in its fortunes. In the pauses a solemn chant is heard without—a Latin hymn, sung by the Canons of Waltham, of which the grand strains seem to rise or fall with the sounds of a battle. The hopes and fears of one who watches a great struggle are vividly expressed in a passage of sustained intensity :

EDITH. Look out upon the hill—is Harold there ?

Stigand answers in the words of Edward's delirious prophecy, now fulfilled :

Sanguelac—Sanguelac—the arrow—the arrow !—away !

The closing scene is the Field of the Dead by night. Aldwyth and Edith meet in their search for the body of Harold. They have just found it, when William of Normandy enters with Malet. Aldwyth is recognized

as the Queen. "Knowest thou this other?" asks William.

MALET. When I visited England,  
Some held she was his wife in secret—some—  
Well—some believed she was his paramour.

EDITH. Norman, thou liest ! liars all of you,  
Your Saints and all ! I am his wife ! and she—  
For look, our marriage ring !

[*She draws it off the finger of HAROLD.*

I lost it somehow—

I lost it, playing with it when I was wild.

*That* bred the doubt ! but I am wiser now . . .

I am too wise . . . Will none among you all

Bear me true witness—only for this once—

That I have found it here again ? [*She puts it on.*

And thou,

Thy wife am I for ever and evermore.

[*Falls on the body and dies.*

The most distinctive feature in Tennyson's treatment of the subject is the dramatic use made of Harold's famous oath to William. Here is seen the special advantage for the historical dramatist—when he is a true artist—of a story such as that which Tennyson has handled here. The main lines are clear and firm. The principal characters are well defined. The dramatic poem can possess all the value of an accurate historical study. It can appeal to all the varied associations of an authentic and venerable tradition ; and, at the same time, the dramatist is not rigidly excluded from the exercise of creative fancy. There is a margin of doubtful legend within which his imagination is legitimately free.



There are elements of romance, floating around the history, to which the poet can give almost any shape or any significance that he pleases, without prejudicing the claim of his drama to be termed historical. That Harold really took some oath to William seems certain. As Mr. Freeman says, the Norman witnesses conflict with each other, and yet no English writer has ever contradicted the general charge. What Harold swore remains doubtful. We may say positively that he did not swear to receive a Norman garrison in Dover Castle, and yet allow that he may have sworn to support William's claim on the English Crown. Mr. Freeman inclines to think that Harold's oath was merely an engagement to marry one of William's daughters, coupled with an act of formal homage. Such an act might have been done when he received knighthood from William, or it might have accompanied the betrothal, and it would have been further recommended by gratitude for his deliverance from Guy's dungeon. At any rate, Tennyson has given a perfectly intelligible form to the incident. With true dramatic genius, he has drawn from it a motive which gives tragic unity to the entire action. Harold's oath becomes his avenging destiny. In his short career it is what the inherited curse was to the house of Pelops. Harold can say, in the true sense which Euripides meant, "My tongue has sworn, but my soul has not sworn." Nothing in the play seems to us finer than the contrast between Harold's own view of his predicament and the casuistry of the theologians who seek to reassure him. They give him absolution. They even suggest that the

English saints will take his side against the Norman. Harold does not care to argue the point on metaphysical grounds; but he knows that an oath is an oath. He knows that he is forsworn; and yet, though the awful nature of the oath itself weighs upon his soul, a true instinct assures him that the real guilt of the perjury rests not with him, but with the man who ensnared him. He has a foreboding that he must suffer the immediate doom of the defiled; but, beyond that doom, he looks up to that Justice which shall give him the reward of the pure in spirit.

It would be easy to point out instances of the minute historical study which has gone to the production of Tennyson's noble drama. When Malet reminds William how his English captive

Haled thy shore-swallow'd, armour'd Normans up,

the touch is justified by that section of the Bayeux tapestry which shows Harold, on the expedition against Conan, plucking the Norman soldiers, two at a time, from the quicksands below Mont St. Michel. Or when Stigand, watching the battle of Senlac, says

There is one

Come as Goliath came of yore,

the allusion is to the man named, or nicknamed, "Taillefer" ("Cut-iron")—a gigantic juggler or minstrel, who rode out before the Norman ranks singing like Harold Hardrada at Stamford Bridge, and tossing his sword in the air. The same accuracy is seen in the reference to "that old song of Brunanburh," of which

Mr. Hallam Tennyson has lately given us a spirited translation in the *Contemporary Review*. But students of English history, however much they may be struck by such traits, will observe with higher interest the Poet Laureate's insight into the political conditions of the time. The scenes in Northumbria may be noticed as illustrating this.

The studies of character in the play are subtle and carefully finished. They have this advantage over those in *Queen Mary*—that, here, the contrasts are more effective, there is a larger, freer atmosphere, there is more action, and, above all, there is more sunshine.

END OF VOL. VIII.





# The Eversley Series.

*Globe 8vo. Cloth. 4s. net per volume.*

- The Works of Matthew Arnold.** 8 vols.  
 ESSAYS IN CRITICISM. First Series.  
 ESSAYS IN CRITICISM. Second Series.  
 EARLY AND NARRATIVE POEMS.  
 LYRIC AND ELEGIAC POEMS.  
 DRAMATIC AND LATER POEMS.  
 AMERICAN DISCOURSES.  
 LETTERS. Edited by G. W. E. RUSSELL. 2 Vols.
- A Memoir of Jane Austen.** By her Nephew, J. E. AUSTEN LEIGH. To which is added "Lady Susan," and Fragments of two other Unfinished Tales by Miss AUSTEN.
- The Holy Bible.** Arranged in paragraphs, with an Introduction by J. W. MACKAIL, M.A. Vol. 2. DEUTERONOMY—2 SAMUEL. Vol. 3. 1 KINGS—ESTHER. Vol. 4. JOB—SONG OF SOLOMON. Vol. 5. ISAIAH—LAMENTATIONS. Vol. 6. EZEKIEL—MALACHI. Vol. 7. MATTHEW—JOHN. Vol. 8. ACTS—REVELATION.
- Essays by George Brimley.** Third Edition.
- Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.** Edited by A. W. POLLARD. 2 Vols.
- Miscellaneous Writings of Dean Church.** Collected Edition. 9 Vols.  
 MISCELLANEOUS ESSAYS.  
 DANTE: and other Essays.  
 ST. ANSELM. | SPENSER. | BACON.  
 THE OXFORD MOVEMENT. Twelve Years, 1833-1845.  
 THE BEGINNING OF THE MIDDLE AGES. (Included in this Series by permission of Messrs. LONGMANS & Co.)  
 OCCASIONAL PAPERS. Selected from *The Guardian*, *The Times*, and *The Saturday Review*, 1846-1890. 2 Vols.
- Life and Letters of Dean Church.** Edited by his Daughter, MARY C. CHURCH.
- Lectures and Essays by W. K. Olliford, F.R.S.** Edited by LESLIE STEPHEN and Sir F. POLLOCK. New Edition. 2 Vols.
- Collected Works of Emerson.** 6 Vols.  
 With Introduction by JOHN MORLEY.  
 MISCELLANIES. | ESSAYS. | POEMS.  
 ENGLISH TRAITS AND REPRESENTATIVE MEN.  
 THE CONDUCT OF LIFE, AND SOCIETY AND SOLITUDE.  
 LETTERS AND SOCIAL AIMS.
- Letters of Edward FitzGerald.** Edited by W. A. WRIGHT. 2 Vols.
- More Letters of Edward FitzGerald.**
- Eight Dramas of Calderon.** Translated by EDWARD FITZGERALD.
- Letters of Edward FitzGerald to Fanny Kemble, 1871-1883.** Edited by W. A. WRIGHT.
- Pausanias and other Greek Sketches.** By J. G. FRAZER, M.A.
- Goethe's Maxims and Reflections.** Translated, with Introduction, by T. B. SAUNDERS.  
 \*\* *The Scientific and Artistic Maxims were selected by Professor Huxley and Lord Leighton respectively.*
- Collected Works of Thomas Gray in Prose and Verse.** 4 Vols. Edited by EDMUND GOSSE. Vol. 1. Poems, Journals, and Essays. Vols. 2 and 3. Letters. Vol. 4. Notes on Aristophanes and Plato.
- Works by John Richard Green.** 16 Vols.  
 HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH PEOPLE. 8 Vols.  
 THE MAKING OF ENGLAND. With Maps. In 2 Vols.  
 THE CONQUEST OF ENGLAND. With Maps. In 2 Vols.  
 STRAY STUDIES FROM ENGLAND AND ITALY.  
 STRAY STUDIES. Second Series.  
 OXFORD STUDIES.  
 HISTORICAL STUDIES.
- Guesses at Truth.** By TWO BROTHERS.
- The Choice of Books, and other Literary Pieces.** By FREDERIC HARRISON.
- The Meaning of History, and other Historical Pieces.** By FREDERIC HARRISON.
- Earthwork out of Tuscany.** Third Edition. By MAURICE HEWLETT.
- Poems of Thomas Hood.** Edited, with Prefatory Memoir, by Canon AINGER. In 2 Vols. Vol. 1. SERIOUS POEMS. Vol. 2. POEMS OF WIT AND HUMOUR. With Vignettes and Portraits.
- Collected Essays of R. H. Hutton.** 7 Vols.  
 LITERARY ESSAYS.  
 ESSAYS ON SOME OF THE MODERN GUIDES OF ENGLISH THOUGHT IN MATTERS OF FAITH.  
 THEOLOGICAL ESSAYS.  
 CRITICISMS ON CONTEMPORARY THOUGHT AND THINKERS. 2 Vols.  
 ASPECTS OF RELIGIOUS AND SCIENTIFIC THOUGHT. Selected from *The Spectator*, and Edited by his Niece, E. M. ROSCOE. With Portrait.
- BRIEF LITERARY CRITICISMS.** Selected from *The Spectator*, and Edited by his Niece, ELIZABETH M. ROSCOE.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

# The Eversley Series—Continued.

*Globe 8vo. Cloth. 4s. net per volume.*

- Life and Works of Thomas Henry Huxley.** 12 Vols. Vol. 1. METHOD AND RESULTS. Vol. 2. DARWINIANA. Vol. 3. SCIENCE AND EDUCATION. Vol. 4. SCIENCE AND HEBREW TRADITION. Vol. 5. SCIENCE AND CHRISTIAN TRADITION. Vol. 6. HUME. With Helps to the Study of Berkeley. Vol. 7. MAN'S PLACE IN NATURE; and other Anthropological Essays. Vol. 8. DISCOURSES, BIOLOGICAL AND GEOLOGICAL. Vol. 9. EVOLUTION AND ETHICS, AND OTHER ESSAYS. Vols. 10, 11, and 12. LIFE AND LETTERS OF T. H. HUXLEY. By LEONARD HUXLEY.
- French Poets and Novelists.** By HENRY JAMES.
- Partial Portraits.** By HENRY JAMES.
- Modern Greece.** Two Lectures. By Sir RICHARD JEBB.
- Letters of John Keats to his Family and Friends.** Edited by SIDNEY COLVIN.
- Epic and Romance.** By Prof. W. P. KER.
- The Works of Charles Kingsley.** 13 Vols. WESTWARD HO! 2 Vols. HYPATIA. 2 Vols. YEAST. 1 Vol. ALTON LOCKE. 2 Vols. TWO YEARS AGO. 2 Vols. HEReward THE WAKE. 2 Vols. POEMS. 2 Vols.
- The Works of Charles Lamb.** Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by Canon AINGER. 6 Vols. THE ESSAYS OF ELIA. POEMS, PLAYS, AND MISCELLANEOUS ESSAYS. MRS. LEICESTER'S SCHOOL, and other Writings. TALES FROM SHAKESPEARE. By CHARLES AND MARY LAMB. THE LETTERS OF CHARLES LAMB. Newly arranged, with additions (1904). 2 Vols. Life of Charles Lamb. By Canon AINGER. Historical Essays. By J. B. LIGHTFOOT, D.D.
- The Poetical Works of John Milton.** Edited, with Memoir, Introduction, and Notes, by DAVID MASSON, M.A. 3 Vols. Vol. 1. THE MINOR POEMS. Vol. 2. PARADISE LOST. Vol. 3. PARADISE REGAINED, AND SAMSON AGONISTES.
- Collected Works of John Morley.** 14 Vols. VOLTAIRE. 1 Vol. ROUSSEAU. 2 Vols. DIDEROT AND THE ENCYCLOPÆDISTS. 2 Vols. ON COMPROMISE. 1 Vol. MISCELLANIES. 3 Vols. | BURKE. 1 Vol. STUDIES IN LITERATURE. 1 Vol. OLIVER CROMWELL. 1 Vol. THE LIFE OF RICHARD COBDEN. 2 Vols.
- Essays by F. W. H. Myers.** 3 Vols. SCIENCE AND A FUTURE LIFE, AND OTHER ESSAYS. CLASSICAL ESSAYS. | MODERN ESSAYS.
- Records of Tennyson, Ruskin, and Browning.** By ANNE THACKERAY RITCHIE.
- The Works of Sir John R. Seeley,** K.C.M.G., Litt.D. 5 Vols. THE EXPANSION OF ENGLAND. Two Courses of Lectures. LECTURES AND ESSAYS. ECCE HOMO. A Survey of the Life and Work of Jesus Christ. NATURAL RELIGION. LECTURES ON POLITICAL SCIENCE.
- The Works of Shakespeare.** 10 Vols. With short Introductions and Footnotes by Professor C. H. HERFORD. Vol. 1. LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST—COMEDY OF ERRORS—TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA—MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM. Vol. 2. TAMING OF THE SHREW—MERCHANT OF VENICE—MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR—TWELFTH NIGHT—AS YOU LIKE IT. Vol. 3. MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING—ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL—MEASURE FOR MEASURE—TROILUS AND CRESSIDA. Vol. 4. PERICLES—CYMBELINE—THE WINTER'S TALE—THE TEMPEST. Vol. 5. HENRY VI.: First Part—HENRY VI.: Second Part—HENRY VI.: Third Part—RICHARD III. Vol. 6. KING JOHN—RICHARD II.—HENRY IV.: First Part—HENRY IV.: Second Part. Vol. 7. HENRY V.—HENRY VIII.—TITUS ANDRONICUS—ROMEO AND JULIET. Vol. 8. JULIUS CÆSAR—HAMLET—OTHELLO. Vol. 9. KING LEAR—MACBETH—ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA. Vol. 10. CORIOLANUS—TIMON OF ATHENS—POEMS.
- The Works of James Smetham.** LETTERS. With an Introductory Memoir. Edited by SARAH SMETHAM and WILLIAM DAVIES. With a Portrait. LITERARY WORKS. Edited by WILLIAM DAVIES.
- The Works of Alfred, Lord Tennyson.** Annotated by the Author. Edited by HALLAM, LORD TENNYSON. Vol. 1. POEMS. 2. POEMS. 3. ENOCH ARDEN and IN MEMORIAM. 4. THE PRINCESS and MAUD. 5. IDYLLS OF THE KING. 6. BALLADS AND OTHER POEMS. 7. DEMETER AND OTHER POEMS. 8. QUEEN MARY AND HAROLD. 9. BECKET AND OTHER PLAYS. (*In Monthly vols. from Dec. 1907.*)
- Selections from the Writings of Thoreau.** Edited by H. S. SALT.
- Essays in the History of Religious Thought in the West.** By Bishop WESTCOTT, D.D.
- The Works of William Wordsworth.** Edited by Professor KNIGHT. POETICAL WORKS. 8 Vols. The Journals of Dorothy Wordsworth, 2 Vols.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.











